Former copyrights regarding Noah's Upheaval (NU) Flood Theory

1st Copyright 2009
2nd Copyright 2010
3rd Copyright 2012
4th Copyright 2013
5th Copyright 2014
6th Copyright & e-book 2015
7th Copyright 2017

All Rights Reserved

Forward

My portion of this book is dedicated to it author Dr. Jerry Bergman, to whom my body of work would not be professionally published without him. It is such a great privilege to have my writing included with one who has written 43(??) books and a number of monographs who-co-authored on many scientific subjects in chemistry, biology, and geology. Even so, he has taken a professional risk in publishing my criticism of Plate Tectonics, a theory presenting the evolution of our earth. He is also taking a professional risk in publishing flood model replacement to Plate Tectonics that I have called 'Noah's Upheaval Flood Theory'. These new ideas may be considered by many evolutionists and some creationists as threatening or 'heretical' to those who hold tightly to the established tenons of Plate Tectonics or astronomy. Bergman has given much of his time in editing my manuscript. I very much appreciate him being open to my unconventional flood model and other geology biblical hypothesis. He has the vision and sees the potential of moving science and the mission of Christ forward – to which I am eternally grateful.

(PENDING: Forward to Dr. Tim Clarey for his contribution.)

Also, I would like to dedicate this to my father, Dr. David L. Smith, who has had such a profound Christian impact on my life and whom I have loved dearly. He has since gone to be with Jesus Christ, his (and my) Lord and Savior, on October 27, 1998. There is not a day that goes by that I do not think of him. I would also like to dedicate this to my mother, Ruth E. Smith, for her never ceasing love for me, believing in me, and dedicating many hours to review my previous manuscripts before they became a book.

Table of Content

Part 1 – Introduction

Part 2 – Plate Tectonic History and it Flaws

Part 3 – Noah's Upheaval (NU) Flood Theory

Foot Notes - Figures (1 – 19) **290**

Figures

44. p 204 Mountains Form over “Decollement” Surface, Crushed Basement Rock
45. p 218 Global Positioning System (GPS)
46. p 249 Ocean Trench & Wadati-Benioff Zone
47. p 256 Six Magasequences over United States
48. p 257 Six Magasequences over Europe
49. p 258 Temperature Blobs in Earth’s Interior – Seismic Tomography

Part 1 – Introduction

I. Parts 1 thru 3

There are three parts the book. What is the history of Plate Tectonics? What are its flaws and is there a better solution?

Part 1 – History & Introduction brief as to why we see the world as it is today. It gives a brief history of the Plate Tectonic Theory and tells how the Noah's Upheaval (NU) Flood Theory came about.

Part 2 – Plate Tectonics and its Flaws give an abbreviated history to Plate Tectonics. Also discussed are some of the unsolved mysteries in geology and some major problems with Plate Tectonics. These unsolved, problematic issues that were brought up in Part 2 that Plate Tectonic was not able to answer, are addressed in Part 3 by the Noah's Upheaval Flood Theory.

Part 3 – Noah's Upheaval (NU) Flood Theory is a new theory with the intent to give a Biblical Flood model to better answer the geophysical questions that have been asked through the centuries of inquiry. It will particularly answer many of the Plate Tectonic questions that are raised in Part 2. While criticism is given by this author, real solutions to astronomy and geological mysteries are also provided.

Dr. Timothy L Clarey, creation scientist with Institute for Creation Research and author of *Carved in Stone, Geological Evidence of the Worldwide Flood* [1] has stated the following as being the standard for scientists and their models to follow. I have done my best to but my biases aside, except my faith in the inerrant Bible, to follow this standard.

---

[1] Timothy Clarey, *CARVED IN STONE, Geological Evidence of the Worldwide Flood,* (first printing March 2020), Institute for Creation Research, P.O. Box 59029, Dallas, TX 75229, ISBN 978-1-946246-25-7, pg. 103.

> Science is a process that includes observation, empirical data collection, classification, and experimentation. Rocks can be identified based on mineralogy and texture. Thicknesses of rocks can be measured and the fossils in those rocks can identified and recorded. Interpretation and worldview come into play when we postulate how and when those rocks arrived at that specific locations. But the rocks and fossils are themselves factual data points. Admittedly, most of the historical earth sciences study no-repeatable events that happen only once in the past."[1]

II. Abstract

The Genesis Flood was a real, global and recent catastrophic event in the age of man. The Floodwaters did not rise like water in a bathtub, but it covered the earth as multiple tsunami sheetflows of water and sediment flowed initially in a very specific direction. It resulted in the reshaping of all the continents and produced all of the major mountain ranges on the earth. It produced the continents' thousands of feet of sediment rock with all the world's fossils existing in the geological column. Given that there was a global worldwide flood, there should be clear evidence of it. If crime investigators can determine how a crime occurred through a crime scene investigation forensics, CSI, on a small scale, we likewise should be able to do a similar investigation on a global scale.

The NU Flood Theory model helps answer questions, such as: "Why do major landmasses such as South America, Greenland, Africa and India have a 'V' pattern only on their south end? Why are nearly all the major peninsulas of the world fixed at the north end with their cantilever end on the south end? Why are so many islands east of their mother continent? Are there any paths or track marks as evidence?" The CSI approach is used in the newly presented *in this flood model* toward understanding the Genesis Global Flood. Before the Flood, one

[1] *Journal of Creation*, Vol. 30(1), 2016, *Empirical data support seafloor spreading and catastrophic plate tectonics*, by Timothy L. Clarey, ISSN 1036-2916, p. 77.

landmass existed which the author has called 'PanNoah'. The author has not called it 'Pangaea', since advocates of Plate Tectonics theory have given it its own specific shape at a very specific era of time, about 225 million Darwin years ago[1] Plate Tectonic Theory is currently the leading geological theory today of how all the major geological features of the earth's surface evolved (Fig. 2). The case will be made that the NU Flood Theory is a superior flood model based on a biblical framework that describes the sequence of the formation of real-world geophysical terrain in the age of man.

III. Introduction

The Genesis Flood was not a local or a regional flood, as will be documented, but it was a global Flood. It was more devastating than anyone could possibly imagine. The Genesis Flood epic was not only catastrophic on a geological scale but also on a cosmic scale – including every planet in our solar system. The cataclysmic Flood event was global in extent starting on the first day of the Flood – Genesis 7:11. So much was the devastation that the Flood defined every major feature in the ocean as well as all the major mountains on land. It came close to destroying the earth as a livable planet.

The Genesis Flood was a real, global Flood, just as the Bible had claimed. The Floodwaters did not simply rise vertically up as water rises up in a bathtub, but it covered the earth as multiple tsunami sheetflows of water and sediment flowed in a very specific direction. Massive amounts of sediments were laid down as tsunami sheetflows covered the earth that now make up nearly the entire Geological Column. The Genesis Flood gives a reasonable explanation for the Massive horizontal forces move sediment massed that compressed to form mountain ranges at their surface. The Flood resulted in the reshaping of all the continents and produced all

[1] United States Government Survey, USGS, web site (http://www.usgs.gov/).

of the major mountain ranges on the earth. It produced the continents' thousands of feet of sediment rock with all the world's fossils existing in the geological column. Given that there was a global worldwide flood, there should be clear evidence of it. If crime investigators can determine how a crime occurred through a crime scene investigation forensics, CSI, on a small scale, we likewise should be able to do a similar investigation on a global scale. The model helps answer questions, such as: "Why do major landmasses such as South America, Greenland, Africa and India have a 'V' pattern only on their south end? Why are nearly all the major peninsulas of the world fixed at the north end with their cantilever end on the south end? Why are so many islands east of their mother continent? Are there any paths or track marks as evidence?" This new model being employs the CSI approach using the most current science of astronomy, geology, sedimentology, geophysics and history to present a real explanation Noah's Flood.

The theory this author has called 'Noah's Upheaval (NU) Flood Theory' explains how Noah's Flood occurred within a Biblical framework. This theory differs from other Flood theories in that it details a very precise path and sequence of events that occurred during a specific time period within the epic historical Flood event. The sequences are based on the same analysis type as a Crime Scene Investigation (CSI). If the Flood was universal, it must have happened by a catastrophic sequence of events. The following tells the account and its sequence from the NU Flood Theory perspective.

The primary target of this book is for anyone who is interested in a new biblical Flood model that integrates the inerrant Word of the Bible with the application of the science of cosmology and geology. The NU Flood theory will answer some of the major science mysteries of today in astronomy and geology. Therefore, it will challenge the uniformitarian evolution

theory of Plate Tectonic Theory, as well as other similar theories. It is a Reader's Digest version of 'Solving Noah's Flood' and 'Noah's Upheaval Flood Theory', that the author has written.[1]

Given all our scientific advancements in the last century, what is left to discover about our earth? One obvious question is why is a new theory being proposed when there is so much information now existing about the earth? If scientists know so much about the earth, they must know how these features came about. Not until the 1950's shortly after World War II , the mid-oceanic ridge and its many transverse fractures was discovered with the new technology such as radar. Plate Tectonic theory has only been accepted since the late 1960s. The fact is there are still so many unanswered questions. Even given all our scientific advancements, we still do not fully understand how mountains[2] and oceans were formed. Scientists have just recently discovered four times the number of volcanoes in the ocean floor using new altimeter satellite discoveries (see XIII. New Ocean Floor Discoveries).[3] We know next to nothing about the earth's mantle, where the mechanism of moving plates of Plate Tectonics is claimed to take place. Therefore, we should not cling to adhoc hypothesis and theories that constantly change to comply with our observable world.[4] We know more about the surface of Mars than we do the mantle of the planet

---

[1] Smith, Wes. 'Solving Noah's Flood' and 'Noah's Upheaval Flood Theory' (copyright 2009 - 2017)

[2] see XIV. Mountain formation and Planations

[3] *Scientists Discover Thousands Of Uncharted Mountains Hidden Beneath The Sea*
http://www.huffingtonpost.com/2014/10/04/thousands-sea-mountains-discovered_n_5929880.html?ncid=txtlnkusaolp00000592

- LiveScience | By Becky Oskin, Posted: 10/04/2014 9:03 am EDT Updated: 10/04/2014 9:59 am EDT

[4] Edward J. Tarbuck & Frederick K. Lutgens, *Earth: An Introduction to Physical Geology*, copyright 2005, Pearson Education, Inc., Upper Saddle River, New Jersey 07458, ISBN

on which we live.[1] Little is known about the origin of the earth's land formation, geomorphology.

> Any serious student of geomorphology will quickly realize what is actually known with certainty and land forms and their origin is surprisingly small, despite the vast amount of research.[2]

In 2009, In Jesus Name Production sent out an announcement to invite anyone in the creation science field to enter their Flood model to be debated among themselves and panel members. The winning Flood model would then be represented in the new production movie, call 'The Flood'. The results of the debate would later become an eBook called 'The Flood Science Review e-book'. There were four well-known Flood authors that were automatically approved who already represented popularly accepted Flood models that were initially submitted - Dr. Walt Brown - Hydroplate Theory, Dr. John Baumgardner - Catastrophic Plate Tectonics, Dr. Larry Vardiman - Vapor Canopy, and Dr. Carl Baugh - Solid Canopy. Four other authors were later considered, but only two were selected - Mike Oard - Impacts / Vertical Tectonics Model and Philip Budd - Collapse Tectonics Model. There were ten panel members who had two major responsibilities: asking questions of the author candidates about the scientific merits of their Flood theories and selecting the additional authors, other than the pre-approved four authors, with less popular models, or new models, which might have a scientific basis. If a new author was to be accepted as a candidate, five of the ten votes were required from the panel

---

0-13-114865, pp 71.

[1] Are there 'oceans' hiding inside the Earth? http://www.bbc.com/future/story/20141029-are-oceans-hiding-inside-earth

[2] Mike Oard, *Flood by Design: Receding Water Shapes the Earth's Surface*, Master Books, Green Forest, AR, 2008, ISBN-13: 978-0-89051-523-5, pp 71-72.

committee.[3] This unknown author had submitted the NU Flood Theory, then less developed, and received four out of six votes, missing by one vote to become a candidate. This unknown author, with no doctorate credentials and had not written any published scientific papers, was one of the two authors that was not selected, but considered it a great privilege to even be considered.

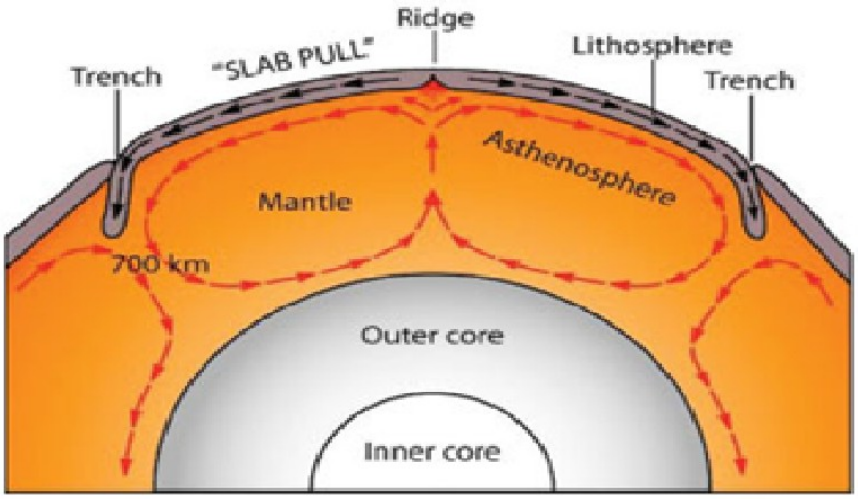


Fig. No. 1
Plate Tectonics Model

Diagram shows the earth's interior as well as a mid-ocean ridge. Two subducting slabs and lithosphere/mantle circulation are also shown which are particular interpretations to the Plate Tectonic Theory.

[3] http://injesusnameproductions.org/flood-science-review

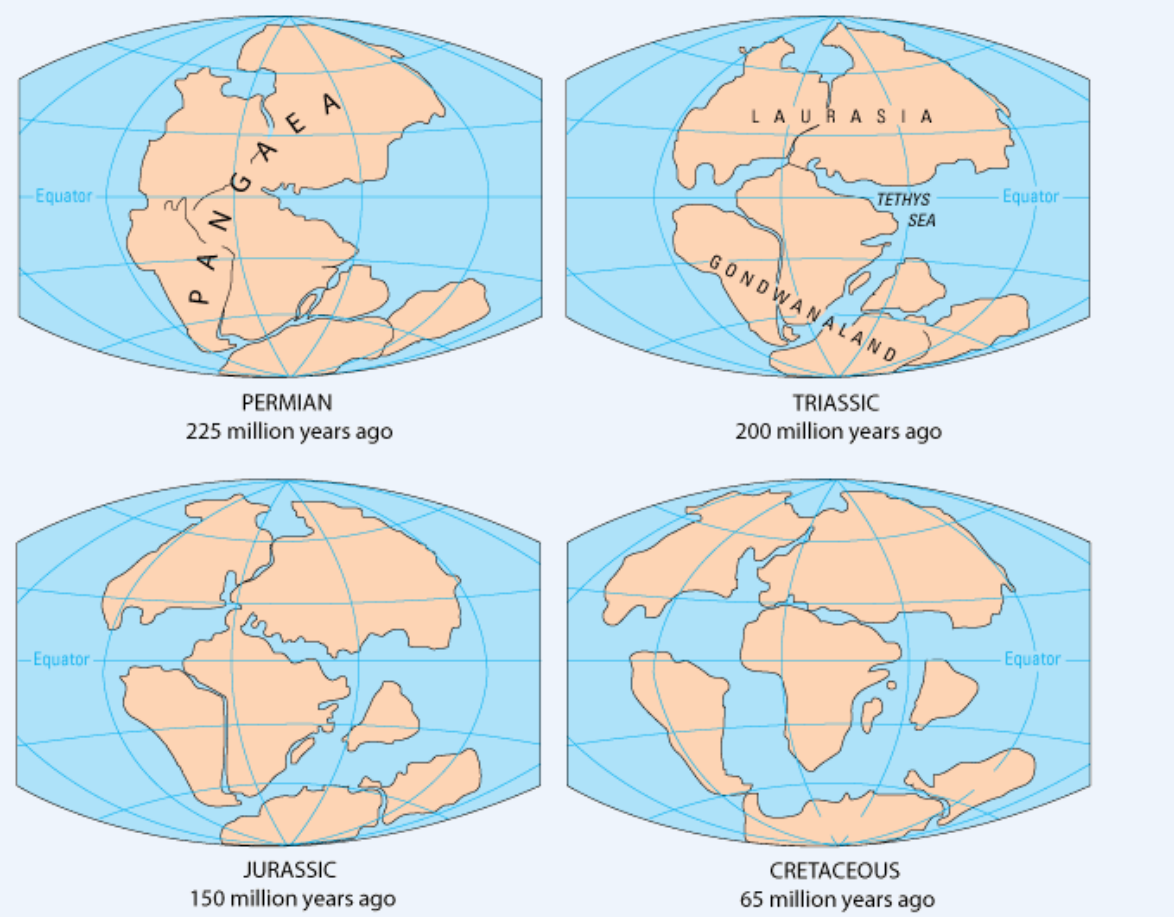


Fig. No. 2

Four Phases of the Splitting of Pangaea (225 mya to 65 mya)[1]

(per Today's Plate Tectonic Theory)

The above illustrations are the four phases of the splitting up of 'Pangaea', a 'super continent', as denoted by the United States Government Survey, USGS, web site (http://www.usgs.gov/). In the **Plate Tectonic Theory**, many scientists believe that Pangaea began to split in the Permian Period, from 225 mya and the continents continues to move slowly in present times. Notice that Pangaea mostly splits east/west from the Mid-Atlantic Ridge. Western Europe was always shown in an east/west orientation. Australia was never connected to Africa or Madagascar. Central America did not exist. India drifted north and slammed into its present position creating the Himalayan Mountains. This theory requires a great deal of morphing to make it seem plausible. The NU Flood Theory allows warping, but not morphing, of any of the continents.

Part 2 – Plate Tectonic History and it Flaws

(Part 3 will discuss potential solutions regarding the Plate Tectonic questions that were raised in Part 2.)

Contrary to the thoughts of modern geologist and many others, the Genesis Flood was never proven wrong in the 1800s. Scholars simply decided to believe that the rocks and fossils were laid down by slow processes over millions of years. There was little real knowledge of the rocks and fossils at this time.[1]

I. History of Plate Tectonics

Plate Tectonic Theory is the leading geological theory today of how the continents split and the oceans formed. Since there is no close second theory, we need to first address the history and underlying issues of this theory.

Plate Tectonic Theory only became accept in the 1960s. Why and how did the Plate Tectonic Theory come about? The United States Geological Survey (USGS) offered four major scientific principles that spurred the formulation of the Plate Tectonics Theory: (1) demonstration of the ruggedness and youth of the ocean floor; (2) confirmation of repeated reversals of the Earth magnetic field in the geologic past; (3) emergence of the seafloor-spreading hypothesis and associated recycling of oceanic crust; (Fig. 3) and (4) precise documentation that the world's earthquake and volcanic activity is concentrated along oceanic trenches and submarine mountain ranges.[2]

---

[1] Mike Oard, *Flood by Design:Receding Water Shapes the Earth's Surface*, Master Books, Green Forest, AR, 2008, ISBN-13: 978-0-89051-523-5, pp 111. - **NOT Approved!**

[2] 'http://pubs.usgs.gov/publications/text/developing.html/
- Developing the Theory [This Dynamic Earth, USGS, printed 10/28/2004

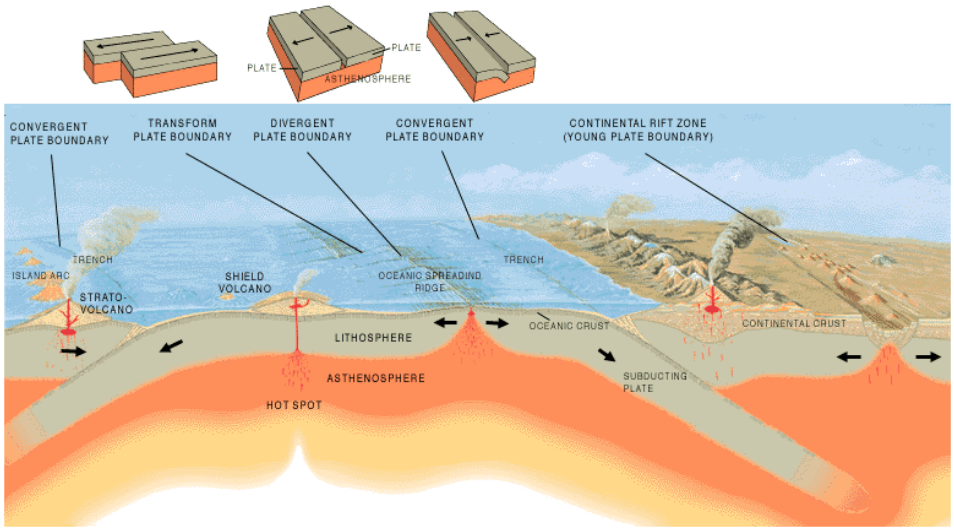


Fig. No. 3

Plate Tectonic Theory: Expansion and Subduction [2]

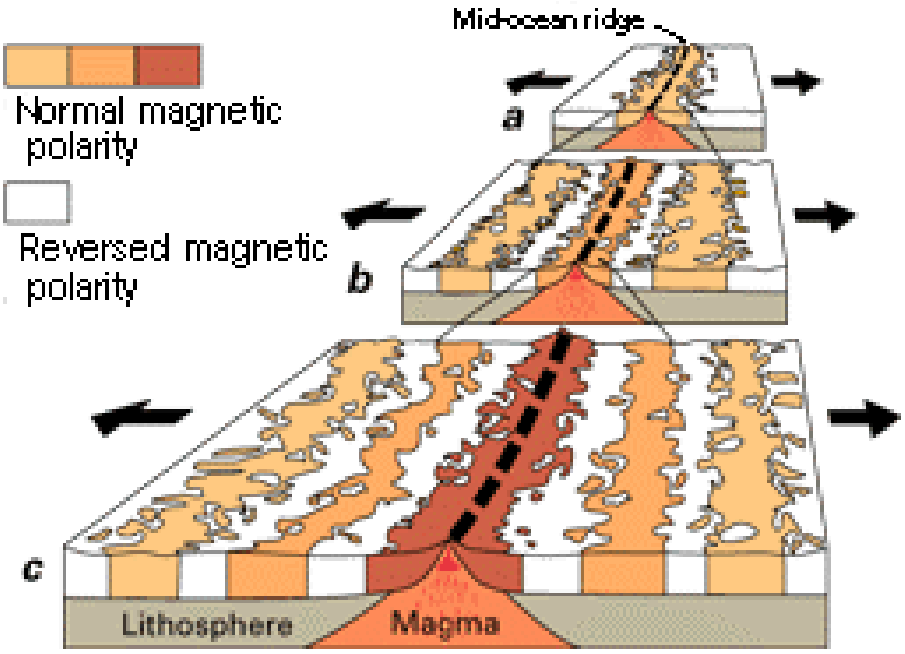


Fig. No. 4

Plate Tectonic Theory: Idealized Illustration of Magnetic Anomaly [3]

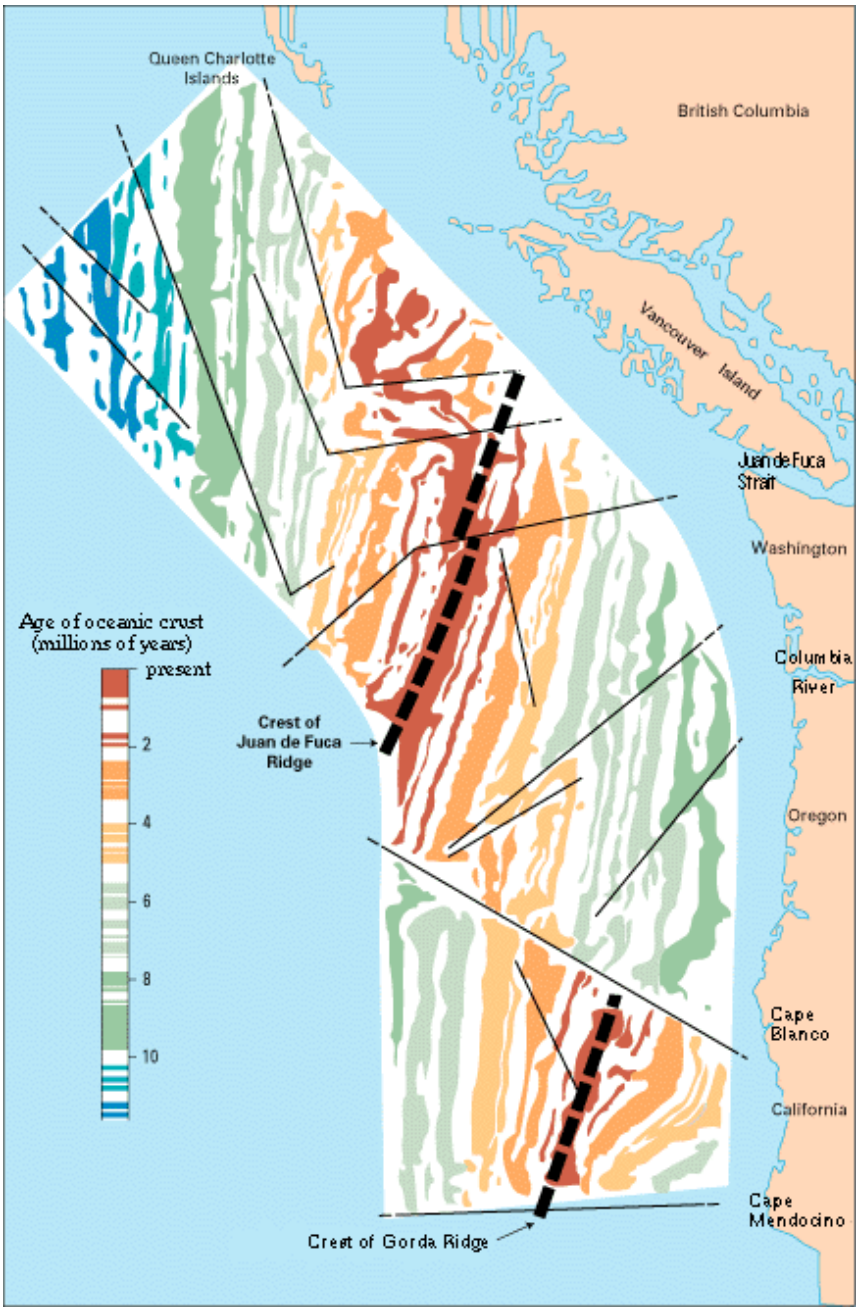


Fig. No. 5

Plate Tectonic Theory: Magnetic Anomaly Slurry [4]

The United States Geological Survey, USGS, has stated the Plate Tectonic Theory in a similar way. The USGS January 2005 website said the following.

> A profound consequence of seafloor spreading is that new crust was, and is now, being continually created along the oceanic ridges. This idea found great favor with some scientists who claimed that the shifting of the continents can be simply explained by a large increase in size of the Earth since its formation. However, this so-called "expanding Earth" hypothesis was unsatisfactory because its supporters could offer no convincing geologic mechanism to produce such a huge, sudden expansion. Most geologists believe that the Earth has changed little, if at all, in size since its formation 4.6 billion years ago, raising a key question: how can new crust be continuously added along the oceanic ridges without increasing the size of the Earth?
>
> This question particularly intrigued Harry H. Hess, a Princeton University geologist and a Naval Reserve Rear Admiral, and Robert S. Dietz, a scientist with the U.S. Coast and Geodetic Survey, who first coined the term seafloor spreading. Dietz and Hess were among the small handful that really understood the broad implications of seafloor spreading. If the Earth's crust was expanding along the oceanic ridges, Hess reasoned, it must be shrinking elsewhere. He suggested that new oceanic crust continuously spread away from the ridges in a conveyor belt-like motion. Many millions of years later, the oceanic crust eventually descends into the oceanic trenches -- very deep, narrow canyons along the rim of the Pacific Ocean basin. According to Hess, the Atlantic Ocean was expanding while the Pacific Ocean was shrinking. As old oceanic crust was consumed in the trenches, new magma rose and erupted along the spreading ridges to form new crust. In effect, the ocean basins were perpetually being "recycled," with the creation of new crust and the destruction of old oceanic lithosphere occurring simultaneously. Thus, Hess' ideas neatly explained why the Earth does not get bigger with seafloor spreading, why there is so little sediment accumulation on the ocean floor, and why oceanic rocks are much younger than continental rocks. [1]

In summary, Plate Tectonic Theory was invented to explain very young features of the ocean floor – not to explain the origins of continents. Before the advent of Plate Tectonic Theory, the prevailing thought by many geologists was that the continents were younger than the ocean floor. The last two sentences explain why the Plate Tectonic Theory came about. Its purpose was to, “explain why the Earth does not get bigger with seafloor spreading, why there is

[1] ‘http://pubs.usgs.gov/publications/text/developing.html/

so little sediment accumulation on the ocean floor, and why oceanic rocks are much younger than continental rocks." [1] It became apparent that the lack of sediment accumulation and deep fissures with little to no erosion implies a young ocean floor and therefore was a serious problem for scientists who required an old earth philosophy. Since this sediment accumulation applied to the ocean floor and not to the land, the Plate Tectonic Theory was invented to specifically address the young ocean floor issue.

Oceans indeed are a central part of plate tectonics. [2]

In 1859, the French creationist geographer Antonio Snider-Pellegrini, in his book *La Création et ses Mystères Dévoilés,* first published the idea that the continents have broken apart from a 'supercontinent' by powerful internal forces within the earth during Noah's Flood. [3] Today, Antonio Snider-Pellegrini is still not given full credit for his great discovery, most likely due to his Noah's Flood interpretation. Later, in 1915, a German scientist, Alfred Wegener, popularized the idea that at one time all the continents were once together as a 'supercontinent' called 'Pangaea'. Although the initial idea of 'supercontinent' was not his original idea, he incorporated the scientific fields of paleontology (study of fossils) and geology (study of rock stratum) with his 'Pangaea' Theory. He believed that this huge landmass split into continents and drifted to their present positions like an icebreaker breaking through ice. The 1915 Pangaea Theory was not widely accepted since there was no good explanation for the mechanism by

---

[1] 'http://pubs.usgs.gov/publications/text/developing.html/

[2] Shaping the Earth, Tectonics of Continents and Oceans, pp. 100.

[3] Andrew A. Snelling, Earth's Catastrophic Past – Geology, Creation & the Flood, Vol.2, copyright 2009, Institute for Creation Research, P.O. Box 59029, Dallas, TX 75229, ISSN-13: 978-0-932766-94-6, www.icr.org, pg 692.

- Le Creation et ses Mysteres Devoiles, Franck and Dentu, Paris, 1859

which the continents were able to break away and drift. The problems Wegener's from a geophysics perspective was how can huge continents be split apart and be dragged or pushed to their present location? In other words, no reasonable mechanism was known to exist! In 1928, Arthur Homes proposed the idea of convection currents within the mantle as a mechanism for drifting continents. In the 1950s, geologist had discovered a new field called paleo-magnetism. When melted lava rock cools below the Curie point (about 585° C for magnetite) the micro iron particles become magnetized and tend to align to magnetic north, providing a record of direction and distance to magnetic north at the time the rock was magnetized.

It was also discovered that the magnetic north appeared to have wandered in a clockwise pattern for millions of years. North America's magnetic north appeared to have wandered as much as a thousand miles west of Europe's magnetic north, but now has converged to have the same magnetic north. This mystery was said to be reconciled by Plate Tectonic proponents by realizing that North America once broke away from Europe millions of years ago. The mid-oceanic ridge system was later discovered after WWII. Oceanographers found it to be forty-thousand miles long with deep transverse fractures that circled the earth like a baseball seam. These fractures were found to extend from continent to continent. In the 1960s, Harry Hess first proposed the idea of seafloor spreading at the mid-oceanic ridge. He further proposed that the ocean floor was moving in a conveyor belt manner and descending into the mantle as convection current. Fred Vine and D. H. Matthews incorporated the new discovery of magnetic anomalies with Hess's seafloor spreading. In 1965, J. Tuzo Wilson placed the final capstone on the Plate Tectonic Theory by dividing the earth into rigid plates that moved relative to one another. He described the three types of plate margins – convergent, divergent, and transform faults (shear

plates). By the end of the 1960s, the tide had changed in favor of the Plate Tectonic Theory. This theory has become, and is, the pervasive model used to describe most geological processes.

The Plate Tectonic Theory gave a cursory explanation of how the continents rode on seven large tectonic lithosphere plates, including many smaller tectonic plates, that also rode over the asthenosphere. The lithosphere extends approximately 100 km (60 mi.) depth, while the asthenosphere is approximately 100 km to 660 km (60 mi. to 340 mi) depth. Its mechanism of movement was described as a convection cell that recycles itself by being created at the mid-oceanic ridge, spreads and cools as it gets further from the center mid-oceanic ridge. It thereby becomes denser and finally subducts and is destroyed at the ocean trenches, a process called subduction.

II. Early Questions about the Plate Tectonic Theory

While the Plate Tectonic Theory does provide a cursory explanation of how many of the earth's features came to be. It does not mean that it is the correct explanation or that it does not have many of its own unanswered questions.

The debates began when Alfred Wegener first proposed his 1915 Pangaea Theory and was revised and finally accepted in the late 1960's to become to be called the Plate Tectonic Theory. A respected contemporary American geologist, R. C. Chamberlain, criticized Wegener's theory.

> Wegener's proposal did not attract much open criticism until 1924, when his book was translated into English, French, Spanish, and Russian. From that point until his death, in 1930, his drift hypothesis encountered a great deal of hostile criticism. The respected American geologist R. T. Chamberlain stated, "Wegener's hypothesis in general is of the foot-loose type, in that it takes considerable liberty with our globe, and is less bound by restrictions or tied down

> by awkward, ugly facts than most of its rival theories. Its appeal seems to lie in the fact that it plays a game in which there are few restrictive rules and no sharply drawn code of conduct.".[1]

Harold Jeffreys, a North American geologist, disagreed with Alfred Wegener's continental drift theory in the 1920's as to how it was possible for a supercontinent to move and be broken into today's continents. He noted that moving continental rock mass, or continents, as proposed by Wegener was physically impossible and that there was no mechanism known for it. In the introduction of the book, *Continents Adrift,* Readings from Scientific American, J. Tuzo Wilson, who determined that continent plates moved in a push, pull and shearing motion, wrote of the ongoing debate in the following:

> "…drift was physically impossible, and for a generation, only a handful of geologists actively supported the idea. One group of geologists working in South America and Africa considered that the strata and fossils of one continent so closely resemble those of the other that they once must have formed parts of the great supercontinent (they called it Gondwanaland) that has since broken apart.
>
> Because Jeffreys continued vigorously to point out that the mechanics of moving solid rock through solid rock appeared to be impossible and that the cause of the supposed motion was unknown, the discoveries discussed in the papers of this first section were essential to the acceptance of the theory of continental drift.[2]

The articles by the Founders of Plate Tectonics, who authored these scientific articles, admitted to the same troubling argument that there was no known mechanism to move continents. In other words, Plate Tectonics was eventually accepted, based on other supposed cursory findings that were thought to make its case. These findings were: 1) the mid-oceanic

---

[1] Edward J. Tarbuck & Frederick K. Lutgens, *Earth: An Introduction to Physical Geology*, copyright 2005, Pearson Education, Inc., Upper Saddle River, New Jersey 07458, ISBN 0-13-114865, pp 43.

[2] *Continents Adrift,* Readings from Scientific American, *Mobility in the Earth, Introduction,* J. Tuzo Wilson, September 1972, pp. 1-2.

ridge was young, 2) magnetic anomalies, and 3) a wandering magnetic north pole. But what was never truly answered, as questioned earlier by Harold Jeffreys, was by what mechanism the continental rock mass drifted over rock. Sir Edward Bullard, a Plate Tectonic founder, who directed the work of Vine and Mathews (who discovered magnetic anomalies that confirmed seafloor spreading) at the University of Cambridge and contributed to the best fit of a unified continent, wrote:

> Little is known of the detailed behavior of the plate; further study is vital for an understanding of the phenomena along the edges of continents. Near the point where the plate turns down there is an ocean deep, whose mode of formation is not precisely understood, but if a plate goes down, it is not difficult to imagine ways in which it could leave a depression in the sea floor.[1]

Sir Edward Bullard also wrote:

> A history of the oceans does not necessarily require an account of the mechanism behind the observed phenomena. Indeed, no very satisfactory account can be given.[2]

Robert S. Dietz coined the term 'seafloor spreading'. Robert S. Dietz and John C. Holden, also founders of Plate Tectonic admit the following:

> The mechanism of plate movement is not yet clear. The plates may be pushed, carried by convection cells in the mantle, driven by gravitational forces or pulled.[3]

Plate Tectonic founders, as well as other scientists, raised other basic questions critical of the Plate Tectonic Theory during the inception of this theory in the 1940s through the 1960s.

---

[1] *Continents Adrift,* Readings from Scientific American, *Origin of the Oceans, (September 1969),* Sir Edward Bullard, September 1972, pp. 94.

[2] *Continents Adrift,* Readings from Scientific American, *Origin of the Oceans, (September 1969),* Sir Edward Bullard, September 1972, pp. 97.

[3] *Continents Adrift,* Readings from Scientific American, *The Breakup of Pangaea (September 1970),* Robert S. Dietz and John C. Holden, September 1972, pp. 97.

The following are a few of the many questions raised in the past by the founders of Plate Tectonic.

Robert L. Fisher and Roger Revelle, who were both involved in the early exploration of the deep trenches in the Pacific Ocean that eventually led to the idea of subduction, noted the following troubling findings:

> Materials which are usually supposed to be deposited only in shallow water have actually been found on the floor of some of the deep trenches.[1]

These founders go on with other questions about Plate Tectonics.

> The question remains: Where are the trenches of yesteryear? Are we living in an exceptional geologic era? Are the apparently young trenches of the present-day unusual formations that have had not counterparts during most of geologic time? Such a speculation would be repugnant to many geologists, because it would be difficult to reconcile with the doctrine that the present is the key to the past.[2]

H. W Menard, who worked many years in the Pacific Ocean basin detailing processes that took place at the mid-oceanic ridge and described the origin of fracture zones, noted the following:

> For reasons only partly knowing the sediment is not uniformly distributed. ….The puzzle deepens when one considers that sediment on oceanic crust older than 20 million years stops increasing in thickness after it sinks to the depth where the calcareous ooze dissolves. Indeed, in many places the age of the oldest sediment is about the same as the volcanic layer on which it lies.[3]

He also stated:

---

[1] *Continents Adrift,* Readings from Scientific American, *The Trenches of the Pacific, (September 1955),* Robert L. Fisher and Roger Revelle, September 1972, pp. 15.

[2] *Continents Adrift,* Readings from Scientific American, *The Trenches of the Pacific, (September 1955),* Robert L. Fisher and Roger Revelle, September 1972, pp. 15.

[3] *Continents Adrift,* Readings from Scientific American, *The Deep-Ocean Floor, (September 1969),* H. W Menard,, September 1972, pp. 83.

> At the boundary between the land and the sea a puzzle presents itself. The sides of the oceanic trench move together at more than five centimeters per year, and it would seem that the sediment sliding into the bottom of the trench should be folded into pronounced ridges and valleys. Yet virtually undeformed sediments have been mapped in trenches by David William Scholl and his colleagues at the U.S. Naval Electronics Laboratory Center.[1]

In addition to Menard's ideas, Sir Edward Bullard also wrote:

> The Urals, if they are not unique among mountain ranges, are at least exceptional in being situated in the middle of a continent (added, i.e. with no apparent evidence of any subduction zone between the two continents other than the Ural Mountains themselves).[2]

And,

> The thickness of the rigid moving plate is quite uncertain, but a value of 70 to 100 kilometers seems likely (added, i.e. referring to the lithosphere).[3]

These are just a few Plate Tectonic questions that have been raised by the founding authors of the Plate Tectonic Theory in the past that still remain today.

In Alfred Wegener's time, many scientists correctly criticized him for not having a valid mechanism to move continents. Today, there is still no known valid mechanism for moving continents or plates. Today, there is no mechanism for push, pull, or shear on the lithosphere plates that are said to be moving them. Proponents of Plate Tectonics do not have a good explanation of how a less dense subducting plate can sink through the denser upper mantle. Instead, these proponents say that the tectonic lithosphere plates magically moved themselves. In

---

[1] *Continents Adrift,* Readings from Scientific American, *The Deep-Ocean Floor, (September 1969),* H. W Menard,, September 1972, pp. 87.

[2] *Continents Adrift,* Readings from Scientific American, *Origin of the Oceans, (September 1969),* Sir Edward Bullard, September 1972, pp. 97.

[3] *Continents Adrift,* Readings from Scientific American, *Origin of the Oceans, (September 1969),* Sir Edward Bullard, September 1972, pp. 93.

other words, while the mechanism for Plate Tectonics cannot be explained, its advocates give ideal, figures and simple explanations as to how the oceans are expanded and subducted. Proponents say continents twenty to seventy miles thick have moved thousands of miles from each other. While college textbooks attempt to explain a simple convection cell process without any critique and without any clear evidence!

Plate Tectonics is todays established geology science, but it has no established mechanism as to how tectonic plates move. Today's advocates primary evidence for Plate Tectonics is still only: 1) the mid-oceanic ridge was young, 2) magnetic anomalies, and 3) a wandering magnetic north pole. Plate Tectonics is what is proposed in nearly all the geology college textbook in United States and worldwide. Typically, there are only a few passages in the entire textbooks where there is little questioning of Plate Tectonic Theory, other than to briefly accept that it must be true even if the mechanism is admittedly unknown. But the authors of these textbooks continue to support it as fact with simple illustrations throughout the whole text. Here is an example of a college textbook with several questioning passages, but always with a positive spin. Therefore, Plate Tectonics should only be considered a model of how the earth's topographical features may have occurred, but it should not be considered established science if it has not established the mechanism that drives plate motion -- if it even exist. The following passages demonstrate a general consensus that there is no known driving mechanism for Plate Tectonics.

> The plate tectonics theory describes plate motion and the role that this motion plays in generating and/or modifying the major features of Earth's crust. Therefore, acceptance of plate tectonics does not rely on knowing exactly what drives plate motion. This is fortunate, because none of the models yet proposed can account for all major facets of plate tectonics.[1]

[1] Edward J. Tarbuck & Frederick K. Lutgens, *Earth: An Introduction to Physical Geology*, copyright 2005, Pearson Education, Inc., Upper Saddle River, New Jersey 07458, ISBN 0-13-

This thought continues saying the follows.

> When seafloor spreading was first proposed, geologists suggested that convection in the mantle consisted of upcurrents coming from deep in the mantle beneath oceanic ridges. Upon reaching the base of the lithosphere, these currents were thought to spread laterally and pull the plates apart. Thus, plates were viewed as being carried passively by the flow in the mantle. However, based on physical evidence, it became clear that upwelling beneath oceanic ridges is shallow and not related to deep convection in the mantle. It is the horizontal movement of lithospheric plates away from the ridge that causes mantle upwelling, not the other way around. *We have learned that plate motion is the dominant source of convective flow in the mantle.*[1](emphasis added)

The passage goes on to say,

> Despite its usefulness in explaining many of the large-scale geologic processes operating on Earth, plate tectonics is not completely understood.
>
> ….The theory of plate tectonics, although a powerful tool, is nonetheless an evolving model of Earth's dynamic processes.[2]

The philosophy of these college textbooks is, "Nothing to see here! We know Plate Tectonics is true, despite no known mechanism, and we are simply going to move forward!" Many earlier geologists, before Plate Tectonic Theory became in popular, refused to acknowledge its validity because there was no mechanism. Many of today's scientists are now so confident in the model to explain the earth's topography and have little concern that no working mechanism exist today for the theory. Many refuse to allow any room for any other

---

114865, pp 69.

[1] Edward J. Tarbuck & Frederick K. Lutgens, *Earth: An Introduction to Physical Geology*, copyright 2005, Pearson Education, Inc., Upper Saddle River, New Jersey 07458, ISBN 0-13-114865, pp 70.

[2] Edward J. Tarbuck & Frederick K. Lutgens, *Earth: An Introduction to Physical Geology*, copyright 2005, Pearson Education, Inc., Upper Saddle River, New Jersey 07458, ISBN 0-13-114865, pp 71.

opinion, censoring everything else outside their dogma. Prominent field geologists and authors, Cliff Ollier and Colin Pain, The Origin of Mountains, who in general support Plate Tectonic, but who's field work on the formation of mountains did not agree with Plate Tectonics, were treated as heretics for taking another view and wrote the following of their experience.

> Anyone who disagrees with the ruling theory is regarded as an ignorant fool by the majority, and authoritarian orthodoxy even goes so far as the suppression of publications that do not fit the orthodox scenario (nowadays plate tectonics). … We believe that for the past few decades, it (geology) has been hampered by rigid orthodoxy and lack of field observations. [1] (emphasis added)

III. Mid-Oceanic Ridge and the Creation of the Ocean Floor

The mid-oceanic ridge is the longest mountain range in the world, approximately 40,000 miles. Along the entire mid-oceanic ridge are both normal faults/fractures and transverse fractures are found in nearly every ocean of the world. The normal faults are multiple fault dykes that run parallel to both sides of the mid-oceanic ridge. The transverse faults cross the mid-oceanic ridge at ninety degrees, or slightly less, often extending from continent to continent. The transverse faults cut through the normal faults and are often offset at the mid-oceanic ridge.

The advocates of Plate Tectonic claim that the mid-oceanic ridge is where the ocean floor is being created, while also being destroyed at the subduction zone. The following figure with the accompanying description details (Fig. 6) best describe the advocates perspective of the formation and spreading of the mid-oceanic ridge.

[1] Cliff Ollier and Colin Pain, *The Origin of Mountains*, Routledge, London, copyright 2000, ISBN 0-415-19889-5, pg. 314-315.

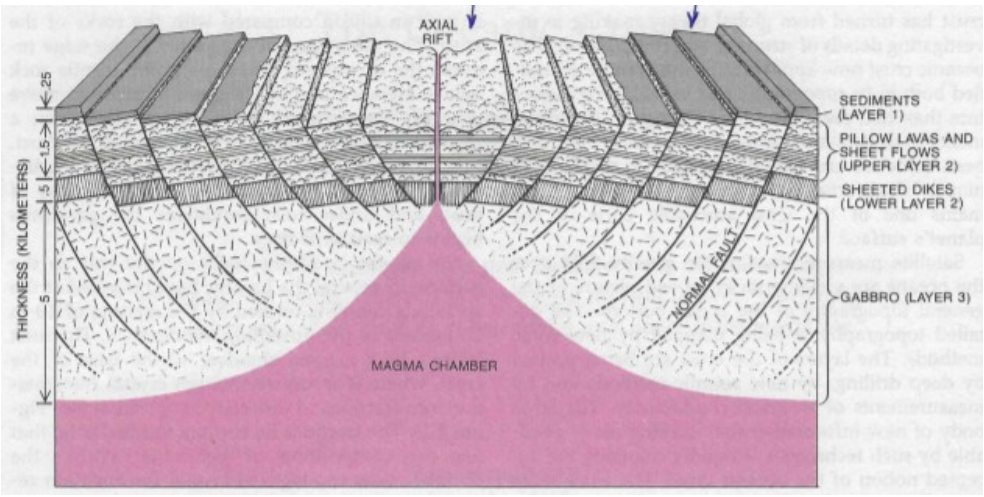

AXIAL
RIFT
SEDIMENTS
(LAYER 1)
PILLOW LAVAS AND
SHEET FLOWS
(UPPER LAYER 2)
SHEETED DIKES
(LOWER LAYER 2)
GABBRO (LAYER 3)
NORMAL FAULT
MAGMA CHAMBER
THICKNESS (KILOMETERS)
.25
1.5
.5
5

Fig. 6
Mid-Oceanic Ridge – Spreading Center

SPREADING CENTER is injected into crust, as shown in this cross section of the midocean ridge. The magma forms as the lithospheric plates diverge and mantle rock rises and melts with the decrease of pressure. It collects in a chamber below the spreading center. Within the magma chamber the rock gabbro crystallizes. At the top of the chamber the magma rises as the plates diverge and cools as vertical dikes. At the surface lava flows out and hardens in the form of sheets and "pillows." As the new crust moves away from the spreading center, a layer of sediments is deposited on it. The crust also cracks along normal faults, which run parallel to the ridge crust. Hence the mature crust has a layered structure from the top down: sediments, sheet and pillow lavas, dikes and gabbros. This describes the Plate Tectonic theory process.

- See footnote . [1]

The explanation given under the figure (Fig. 6) raises multiple questions. How does the mid-oceanic ridge expand, given the multiple, parallel, vertical dykes and associated plateaus? Do new plateaus between parallel fractures to the mid-oceanic ridge, normal faults, rise up between the existing plateaus? There does not seem to be a mounting up of magma vertical dyke walls. Further examining the figure with the accompanying description below it, there are multiple stratums of pillow lavas and sheet flows overlaying a thick stratum of sheeted dikes. Strata on either side of the mid-oceanic ridge strata, the pillow lavas and sheet flows overlaying a thick stratum of sheeted dikes must have been laid down at nearly the same time. These many flanking faults cut to depths of to nearly the magma chambers. The mid-oceanic ridge is

[1] *Shaping the Earth, Tectonics of Continents and Oceans,* Readings from Scientific American, *The Oceanic Crust,* Jean Francheteau, September 1983, Figure 2.1, pp. 24. - **NOT Approved!**

illustrated, not as being the peak, but as being concaved, having the least elevation at its center and being slightly stepped up with each flanking normal fault. With each stepping up, so is each multiple stratum stepped up. The above mid-oceanic ridge is inconsistent with their Plate Tectonics explanation of the formation of today's mountains. If using similar logic, or science, as strata laid down on land, each stratum within the entire suite of multiple stratums must have been laid down as level strata at the same time period along the entire length and hundreds of miles width of the mid-oceanic ridge. Later, the mid-oceanic ridge fractured multiple distances and raised parallel along the flanks of the ridge centerline to form normal faults. But this logic defeats the whole theory that the ocean floor is spreading out from its center being the source of the formation of tectonic plates. Where is the evidence of tectonic plate creation spreading if the strata were already in place for hundreds of miles width before any normal fault formed? (Plate Tectonics contends that the mid-oceanic ridge was tectonic created at approximately two inches per year for millions of years.) Also, the formation of the tectonic plates should no longer be considered functional given the reality of the normal faults prevents Plate Tectonic mechanism of push or pull at the mid-oceanic ridge that will be discussed later in further detail.

Advocates of Plate Tectonics say that the crust/lithosphere plates are riding on the asthenosphere. This is all supposed to take place while the ocean floor crust/lithosphere/asthenosphere was being created at the mid-oceanic ridge. Is this really the case? In the Plate Tectonic Theory, the lithosphere is made up of rigid plates that ride over a less ridged asthenosphere and are part of the upper mantle. Advocates believed that there is no compositional difference between the lithosphere and the asthenosphere, except for temperature difference where the mantle rock begins to melt at depth at approximately 1300°C at close to 100

km (62 mi.) depth. At this temperature, the lithosphere is said to be independent and detached from the below asthenosphere. The lithosphere is therefore approximately 100 km (62 mi.) on average. The asthenosphere is approximately 660 km (412 mi.) on average. Therefore, advacates believe the asthenosphere is able to separate from the above lithosphere like a conveyor belt deep within the mantle.

> Earth's interior is characterized by a gradual increase in temperature, pressure, and density with depth. Estimates put the temperature at depth of 100 kilometers at between 1200°C and 1400°C, whereas the temperature at Earth's center may exceed 6700°C. [1]

The later description says:

> Beneath the lithosphere, in the upper mantle (to a depth of about 660 kilometers), lies a soft, comparatively weak layer known as the asthenosphere ("weak sphere"). The top portion of the asthenosphere has a temperature/pressure regime that results in a small amount of melting. Within this very weak zone the lithosphere is mechanically detached from the layer below. The result is that the lithosphere is able to move independently of the asthenosphere, a fact we will consider in the next section.
>
> It is important to emphasize that the strength of various Earth materials is a function of both their composition and of the temperature and pressure of their environment. You should not get the idea that the entire lithosphere behaves like a brittle solid similar to rocks found on the surface. Rather, the rocks of the lithosphere get progressively hotter and weaker (more easily deformed) with increasing depth. At the depth of the uppermost asthenosphere, the rocks are close enough to their melting temperatures (some melting may actually occur) that they are very easily deformed. Thus, the uppermost asthenosphere is weak because it is near its melting point, just as hot wax is weaker than cold wax. [2]

The conveyor belt analogy describes the following.

---

[1] Edward J. Tarbuck & Frederick K. Lutgens, *Earth: An Introduction to Physical Geology*, copyright 2005, Pearson Education, Inc., Upper Saddle River, New Jersey 07458, ISBN 0-13-114865, pp 21.

[2] Edward J. Tarbuck & Frederick K. Lutgens, *Earth: An Introduction to Physical Geology*, copyright 2005, Pearson Education, Inc., Upper Saddle River, New Jersey 07458, ISBN 0-13-114865, pp 21.

> Lithospheric plates move relative to each other at a very slow but continuous rate that averages about 5 centimeters (2 inches) per year. This movement is ultimately driven by the unequal distribution of heat within Earth. Hot material found deep in the mantle moves slowly upward and serves as one part of our planet's internal convection system. Concurrently, cooler, denser slabs of oceanic lithosphere descend into the mantle, setting Earth's rigid outer shell into motion. [1]

Why would the lithosphere be independent and detach from the asthenosphere? Is this true because it is necessary for the theory of Plate Tectonics to work? If the boundary between the lithosphere and the asthenosphere is not compositional, but simply the temperature where mantle rock begins to melt at 1300°C at close to 100 km (62 mi.) depth, how does that make the two spheres independent and detached? Should we not expect a broad range depth where there are slight variations in temperatures? The above quote notes that the lithosphere get progressively hotter and weaker with increasing depth. At this broad range depth with slight temperature change, rock does not perceptively change at all. In other words, there is no perceptive change between the lithosphere and the asthenosphere in depth from one foot to the next over hundreds of feet even at the melting depth. Effectively, there cannot be a distinctive plane of division between the two, except at a global definition as defined in text books. Realistically, the lithosphere and the asthenosphere cannot truly be independent and detached. They are the exact same compositional mantle rock material through and through with only a difference in temperature. Why should there be any movement between the two spheres? If it were possible to create a horizontal force to cause differential movement between the two, the movement could only cause an equal torsion at depth, not a detachment between the plane surfaces. Distortion can only be accentuated by slow plate movements of inches per year – not

[1] Edward J. Tarbuck & Frederick K. Lutgens, *Earth: An Introduction to Physical Geology*, copyright 2005, Pearson Education, Inc., Upper Saddle River, New Jersey 07458, ISBN 0-13-114865, pp 56.

detachment. Supporters of Plate Tectonic have not given adequate evidence that this detachment has actually occurred other than to say that it must be true to prove the theory.

The lithospheric plates and the asthenosphere are supposed to have been created at the mid-oceanic ridge in a convection cell manner. If this is the case, then the magma should come from a very deep source – perhaps even the core/mantle boundary. Therefore, one would expect that the mid-oceanic ridge would be delineated with deep earthquakes. But instead, it is delineated with shallow earthquakes. Therefore, since the magma does not come from a deep source, the convection cell hypothesis is not a good candidate because it requires a deep source to move the lithosphere and the asthenosphere. Without plate circulation and the plate creation at the mid-oceanic ridge, evidence does not support the Plate Tectonic Theory.

Also, how is a 660 km (412 mi.) vertical wall of crust/lithosphere/asthenosphere (mostly asthenosphere) formed and maintained on a vertical face at the mid-oceanic ridge, then moved along in a conveyor belt manner for thousands of miles? Studies show the asthenosphere to be 660 km (412 mi.), while the lithosphere to be only several kilometers at the mid-oceanic ridge, since the difference between the two spheres is temperature definition only. The lithosphere will increase from several kilometers at the mid-oceanic ridge to 100 km (62 mi.) `in average depth away at the ocean basins. What mechanism allows for this amazing formwork process to create vertical walls hundreds of miles in depth (crust/lithosphere/asthenosphere) on each side and then move them by push or pull as a unit-body inches per year uniformly and flawlessly away from the opening of the mid-oceanic ridge. This process must be done where magma rises at the mid-oceanic ridge, the walls on each side harden and spread outward without any construction formwork, and without freezing up and blocking the its opening. Saying that it moves inches per

year does not remove this truly miraculous feat, but adds to it. If neither the lithosphere or the asthenosphere is being created, neither can there be a convection cell mechanism for the Plate Tectonic Theory. The 7 km (4 mi.) ocean crust, by itself, would be much too thin to be pushed, pulled, or drawn; therefore, Plate Tectonic does not have a good mechanism to create the structure of the plates, let alone move them. Therefore, convection cell mechanism ceases to be a good option of moving continents on its own.

The Plate Tectonics theory makes the claim that the conveyor belt mechanism somehow converts nearly all the vertical upswell components at the mid-oceanic ridge to a 90 ° horizontal component, parallel to the ocean basement floor. It says that a two-mile depth rigid lithosphere at the mid-oceanic ridge will be able to push (under the push, not pull option) a 100 km (62 mi.) depth lithosphere segment hundreds of miles away from the ocean basins. It then claims to further move this thin sheet lithosphere into the vast subduction zones depths thousands of miles away. In reality, the less dense magma that rises to the surface will simply squeeze through the mid-oceanic ridge rock cavity to spill over the previously laid denser lava rock at the ocean floor surface with no consequential horizontal forces. Where is their physics experiments to prove otherwise?

The three mechanism for the movement of the lithosphere, as defined by J. Tuzo Wilson, was push, pull and shearing of plates. The ‘push’ option is considered the least viable for several reasons. There is not near enough elevation of the mid-oceanic ridge to allow the ocean floor to move, given its weight and friction that must be overcome. Even if there was enough elevation, the mass rock to be pushed would crush the rock immediately in front of it in an effort to overcome the friction from the weight of the thousands of square miles of ocean floor slab in front of it. It would buckle along the

flanks of the mid-oceanic ridge long before it would be able to push the whole sheet of ocean floor in front of it. Also, this option would destroy the transverse fracture system in the ocean floor over the presumed millions of years. This is not what is observed.

Many scientists consider the 'pull' option the most likely candidate of the three, but it also is not a good option. Rock performs very poorly in tension while overcoming friction from the weight of the ocean floor slab. Once the subduction slab would begin to have micro-tears parallel to the line of subduction, it would eventually fracture and no longer have the ability to pull the once attached slab with it. Once it tears, it would not easily reattach itself. Remember that the mid-oceanic ridge (Fig. 6), where ocean floor spreading began, was where normal fractures flank its centerline. This makes the 'pull' option nearly impossible right from the very start. Since all the mid-oceanic ridges are transversed by thousands of transverse faults that are relatively evenly distributed all over the globe like a seam of a baseball, each fault acts as a tear in the ocean floor sheet that greatly weakens its strength to be able to 'push', 'pull' or 'shear'.

The transverse fractures extend thousands of miles and often extend from continent to continent. The ocean floor segments between the transverse fractures may be as little as fifty miles or hundreds of miles but its entire length may extend well over a thousand miles. The ocean floor can be thought of as being divided by very long, narrow, block strips, or segments, that are separated in the middle by the upswelling and longitudinal fracturing of the mid-oceanic ridge. If the rigid major plates of the lithosphere as defined by Plate Tectonics were truly slipping past each other, there should only be transverse faults with well-defined delineation lines that define the plates where they are moving past each other, forming shear planes. Instead thousands of

micro plates (between the transform fractures), many less than fifty miles wide, extend from continent to continent, divided by a mid-oceanic ridge! These thin strips of ocean floor do not have the structural capacity for the push, pull or shear options to allow for the conveying of the ocean floor. Also, the seven major lithospheric plates may or may not have a definitive boundary of demarcation (i.e. Himalayan Mountains may not be considered a definitive boundary by some Plate Tectonic proponents), but these micro-plates are better defined. So, why are these demarcated micro-plates given so little attention?

If the ocean floor is created at the mid-oceanic ridge, why is it offset with transverse fracture discontinuity? College textbooks often show that the magma plume is directly under the centerline swell of mid-oceanic ridge, while showing its many offsets in the background. This implies that there is a line of magma plume directly under each and every centerline offset, skipping to the next, without consideration as to if the magma also follows the transverse fracture path. There are literally hundreds of these centerline offsets! If there is a magma plume under each offset, each creating and moving thousands of miles of sliver, segments of ocean floor away from the centerline of the mid-oceanic ridge, should the magma plume line not run into the next adjacent ocean floor segment? Or, does it go under the next sliver segment without splitting the next segment that it runs into? Or, does the plume then jump to the next mid-oceanic offset to split the ocean floor again to be repeated this discontinuity hundreds of times? Do the plumes also follow along the adjacent transverse fracture line to then follow the next offset? How is this discontinuity jump possible under the Plate Tectonic Theory scenario?

IV. Subduction

Proponents of Plate Tectonic say that the lithosphere plates destroy itself subducting at the ocean floor trenches, mostly along the Pacific Ocean Ring of Fire delineated by earthquakes and volcanoes. As the ocean floor spread away from the mid-oceanic ridge over eons of time, it cools and becomes denser. As it becomes denser it begins to sink and subduct under the opposing plate, typically the continental plate. In other words, the ocean floor subduction and its distance from its source, the mid-oceanic ridge, is dependent on the cooling temperature of the ocean floor basin – lithosphere and asthenosphere.

It has often been noted by Plate Tectonic advocates that, "The depth to which the crust sinks have been shown to very with the square root of its age." [1]. This gives a false premise that there is a correlation between ocean floor age, depth, and with its decreasing temperature away from the mid-oceanic ridge, and therefore; evidence for subduction. Of course, if there is a swelling in the mid-oceanic ridge, the rest of the ocean floor, or basin, will be lower such that an equation can be applied to represent it; but this has little to do with whether tectonic plates actually subducted (The ocean floor age will later be shown to have been formed very recent and suddenly, therefore; not relevant to the formation of subducting plates.). Proponents say that the ocean crust is created and expanded symmetrically on either side of this mid-oceanic ridge. But, in the southeast Pacific Ocean, the mid-oceanic ridge, East Pacific Rise, where distance varies from zero to 2,000 miles from the west coast of South America, the ocean floor is said to

[1] *Shaping the Earth, Tectonics of Continents and Oceans,* Readings from Scientific American, *The Oceanic Crust,* Jean Francheteau, September 1983, pp. 26.

be created. To the east, the Nazca Plate is said to be subducting perpendicular to the mid-oceanic, under South America, due to cooler temperatures. On the west side of the Pacific Ocean along the Mariana Trench, tectonic plates are said to be destroyed at the subduction zone approximately 7,000 miles away from the East Pacific Rise! If the ocean floor subducts and cooler temperatures result in denser ocean floors are compelled to sink, why on the east side of the East Pacific Rise, west of South America, does it only vary from zero to 2,000 miles before it subducts? This difference becomes even more stark as the East Pacific Rise converges to zero miles north into North America! If the distance from the mid-oceanic ridge varies greatly from the boundary edges of the continental plates where subduction takes place, how can a case for subduction based on ocean floor cooling temperatures be made? If the farther distance away from the mid-oceanic ridge, the colder the ocean floor, the denser it gets, the greater tendency to subduct, then should not the distance of subduction from mid-oceanic ridge be near parallel with little variability? Or, if the ocean floor basins sink because they are colder and denser, why doesn't the floor sink like sinkholes instead of subducting sheets[1]? Instead, the distribution of thousands of volcanoes that have released much heat in the past, randomly poke out of the ocean basins floors on both sides of ocean trenches without regard to any correlation to distance from the mid-oceanic ridge and the ocean floor temperatures.

If we thought of tectonic plates as a sheet of paper that subducted and the forces on it, we might consider a simple experiment of inserting the sheet into a closed phone book to mimic the "push" scenario of subduction with friction resistance. We would find

[1] Dr. Jay Wiles critique of Plate Tectonics during author's conversation with him.

that it would most likely buckle at the point of entry, not able to maintain its structural integrity. Also, if the sheet was not evenly pushed through along its entire edge, it would quickly crumble at its corner edge and lose its ability to impel at entry. Similar, in a "pull" situation, say a paper shredder, if the paper is not pulled through very evenly, the paper will "jam". In other words, if subduction were possible, it would have to be extremely "regulated". But what is doing the regulating? Yet, hundreds of thousands of square miles are said to have subducted very smoothly over millions of years without any perceivable problems. This is even more exasperated when you consider the supposed rotating subduction zones above Australia and New Zealand where the New Guinea Trench was said to be moving southward above New Guinea, while South Solomon Trench and North New Hebrides Trench and New Hebrides Trench above the Coral Sea and Tasman Sea are said to have been moving northward. So, under this scenario, should we not expect a subduction "jamming", like the paper "jamming", not able to protrude any deeper in depth. Again, what was doing the precision "regulating"?

The mid-oceanic ridge length is approximately three times the length of the subduction length. Yet, the amount of magma said to exit the mid-oceanic ridge must be equal the amount of subduction into the ocean floor. This assures that the earth is neither shrinking nor expanding, but maintaining the same density. Therefore, if the rates of the ocean floors are approximately the same, the subduction length must be the same as the mid-oceanic ridge. This must also take place on a spherical earth, not on a simple two-dimensional surface as shown in 'out of proportion' textbook drawings. This precision of inflow verses outflow would have to be so precise that it would require computers; not left to accident, as purported by Plate Tectonics.

> Just as a balance between spreading and sinking shapes the slopes of the mid-oceanic ridges, so does a balance between lava discharge and spreading build undersea mountains, hills and valleys. [1]

One question is why should the lithosphere plates subduct in the first place? This includes the partial melt ocean crust and the stiffer upper crust. The conservative density of the plate is approximately 3.8 g/cm^3 (Water is 1.0 g/cm^3, therefore the density of the plate is 3.8 times the density and weight of water for a given volume.). The density of the mantle just below the asthenosphere is thought to be 4.2 g/cm^3. It matters not whether the lithosphere is thought to be solid or if the lower mantle was liquid. Basic laws of physics say that a lower density will not be able to sink into a higher density, unless it has an acceleration force, which both have none.

An example of this is that a less dense block of solid wood will not sink in a bucket of water, even though the wood is solid and the water is liquid. Even if the block of wood (acceleration of a less dense object) is dropped into the water, it would pop back up to the surface. Notice that it is a function of density between the two medians as to which one sinks or floats, not whether one medium is solid or liquid. Even if it is conceded that the upper mantle portion could subduct, why should it be that the less dense partial melt ocean crust would also subduct? Using the same logic of the advocates of Plate Tectonic that the continents are too buoyant to sink, then to be consistent; they should concede that the less dense ocean floor is also to buoyant too sink.

More recently in excerpts from the 1998 lecture notes of Prof. John Tarney's, University of Leicester, titled *Plate Tectonics: Geological Aspects*, Prof. Tarney advocates this very idea.

---

[1] *Continents Adrift,* Readings from Scientific American, *The Deep-Ocean Floor, (September 1969),* H. W Menard,, September 1972, pp. 84.

His perspective is that the Plate Tectonic Theory is correct, the new findings having strange anomalies about the earth's crust and the mantle, need to fit into this theory. One anomaly is why should a less dense ocean crust subduct into a denser mantle?

> Lower Mantle. Below 700 km no more major transformations are possible - the minerals are as close-packed as they can get. There is thus then a slow progressive increase in density to the mantle-core boundary. [1]
>
> A point of interest is whether this sharp increase in density at 650-700 km acts as a barrier to mantle convection. If the slab cannot penetrate this boundary, does it pile up above 700 km? Are there two convecting zones in the mantle: one above, one below the 700 km discontinuity? Does this also coincide with a chemical boundary? Is there any chemical interchange across the boundary layer? [2]
>
> One of the problems of plate tectonics is the fate of the subducting slab. This can be traced, from seismic evidence, to descend to about 650 km; but the evidence is somewhat conflicting regarding the extent to which it penetrates the dense 650 km discontinuity. Because the phase changes with depth are now known to some detail, both for ultramafic mantle material and for subducted basaltic ocean crust, it is possible to calculate their modal compositions with depth. [3]
>
> Densityies (g/cc) of thermally equilibrated basaltic ocean crust, subducted harzburgite lithosphere compared with undepleted pyrolite mantle to depths of 800 km. Note that the ocean crust is mostly more dense and harzburgite is less dense than pyrolite down to 650 km depth, but than their positions are reversed. [4]
>
> Density differences between basalt-pyrolite and harzburgite-pyrolite as the subducted ocean crust sinks. The basaltic slab becomes less dense than mantle pyrolite in the depth range 650 - 750 km. [5]
>
> Ringwood (1991) argues that these changes then have the effect of trapping subducted basaltic ocean crust at the 670 km discontinuity.... [6]

---

[1] https://www.le.ac.uk/gl/art/pdfdocs/intromna.pdf , 1998 lecture

[2] https://www.le.ac.uk/gl/art/pdfdocs/intromna.pdf , 1998 lecture

[3] https://www.le.ac.uk/gl/art/pdfdocs/intromna.pdf , 1998 lecture

[4] https://www.le.ac.uk/gl/art/pdfdocs/intromna.pdf , 1998 lecture

[5] https://www.le.ac.uk/gl/art/pdfdocs/intromna.pdf , 1998 lecture

[6] https://www.le.ac.uk/gl/art/pdfdocs/intromna.pdf , 1998 lecture

> Most plumes need to be generated at a discontinuity, either the 650 km one or at the core-mantle boundary. [7]

Again, the lab testing evidence point to the fact that the supposed subducting material must be less dense than the mantle rock. As more research information comes to light, there appears to be more apparent disagreements with Plate Tectonics. As typical, Plate Tectonics is rarely questioned by its supporters in the midst of such a quandary. With all the lab testing of the mafic rock to determine the densities at depth, it becomes much more difficult to show that Plate Tectonic is even possible. If the "… subducting basaltic slab becomes less dense than the mantle pyrolite in the depth range of 650 – 750 km." (406-468 mi.), then the mechanism for subduction, in the context of Plate Tectonics should be questioned.

V. Magnetic Anomalies and the Ocean Floor

The continents are primarily made up of granite rock material. But, the ocean floor is mostly made up of mafic, basalt rock, or lava rock approximately five to seven kilometers in depth. The ocean floor overlies the mantle. In the Plate Tectonic Theory, the ocean floor has been spreading away from the mid-oceanic ridge for at least two hundred million years moving ridged continental plates with it. The primary evidence is the magnetic anomalies that makes up the five to seven kilometers of ocean floor that that line the ocean floors of every ocean depth by once partial melt lava basalt. The basalt is made up of micro-ferric magnetic iron that supposedly cooled in the direction of magnetic north, or magnetic south, forming magnetic anomalies. The basalt rock become partially magnetized when it begins to cool below the Curie temperature, or Curie point. This phenomenon was named after Pierre Curie, who discovered that at

[7] https://www.le.ac.uk/gl/art/pdfdocs/intromna.pdf , 1998 lecture

approximately 570 °C (1,060 °F), the micro-ferric material lost, or gained, magnetism as the temperature rose or fell as it passed through this critical temperature threshold.

The ocean floor magnetic anomalies were a primary reason given for the justification of the Plate Tectonic Theory. At the mid-oceanic ridge, the ocean crust is approximately seven km (4.4 mi.); the lithosphere is only several kilometers; the asthenosphere extends to 660 km (410 mi.) depth. The lithosphere is said to average 100 km (62 mi.) depth at the ocean basin as it cools away from the mid-oceanic ridge. If the evidence for ocean floor spreading is magnetic anomalies, which is the result of partial melt of the magma, then why is it only the top seven km (four mi.) crust that is with magnetic anomalies properties? It does not appear to be true for the rest of the lithosphere or asthenosphere depth – a sum total of 760 km (475 mi.) in depth away from the mid-oceanic ridge. Therefore, there is no real evidence that either the lithosphere (not including the ocean floor crust) or the asthenosphere was created or spread at the mid-oceanic ridge. This would imply that if seafloor spreading was occurring, it should only apply to the top seven km (four mi.) ocean crust portion, not the underlying miles of lithosphere or asthenosphere. There is certainly no mechanism for only moving only the top seven km (four mi.) of ocean floor. Also, if there is no magnetic anomaly evidence for the lithosphere or the asthenosphere to be created, then there is no need for the mechanism for either of their movement in their creation or destruction.

It would be very easy to confuse the idea that magnetic anomalies were strong evidence that the continent crust and ocean floor were moved on lithosphere plates. The underlying assumption is that the magnetic anomaly makes up the total depth of the lithosphere plates. Instead, the magnetic anomalies make up only the ocean crust portion, seven km (four mi.) depth. Also, what adds to the confusion is that the continental and ocean crust are considered part

of the lithosphere. This most likely came about because, "In the plate-tectonic theory, the crust and the upper mantle of the earth are divided into the lithosphere, or strong layer, and the asthenosphere, or weak layer." [1] Therefore, the inclusion of the ocean and continental crust into the definition of the lithosphere can be very misleading. In other words, those who invented the Plate Tectonic Theory defined (or re-defined) the lithosphere and the asthenosphere to fit the desired outcome of their theory. If we considered the ocean crust, approximately only seven km (four mi.) thick, as being a separate entity from the lithosphere, we would not so easily have associated the ocean floor magnetic anomalies as being evidence that the lithosphere plates moved at all, given that its average depth is 100 km (62 mi.).

After the outpouring of the ancient ocean floor magma over the eons, it is thought that micro-iron particles within the cooling lava align their polarity to the current magnetic North Pole. If the earth's polarity changes over eons of time, then so would the polarity direction of the magnetic anomalies to change to the more current North Pole orientation. If the source of all the magma was from the mid-oceanic ridges and the continental plates move slowly away from the mid-oceanic ridge, then we would expect the magnetic anomalies to switch polarity South Pole orientation as one moves away from the mid-oceanic ridge on each side, forming a mirrored image (Fig. 3 thru Fig. 5). This is thought to be the case, but is it really?

Magnetic anomalies appear to be real, but several problems arise. Did the entire ocean's magma come from only the mid-oceanic ridge? If so, why is the ocean floor consistently five to seven kilometers thick over hundreds of thousands of square miles? Geology textbook authors most always show magnetic zebra stripping nearly perfectly mirrored on both sides of the mid-oceanic ridge (Fig. 4). Many students may be surprised to know that the ocean floor is not color

[1] *Shaping the Earth, Tectonics of Continents and Oceans,* Readings from Scientific American, *The Oceanic Crust,* Jean Francheteau, September 1983, pp. 23.

coded, but many geology professors lead students to believe that there is a real ocean floor distinction. While the magnetic striping does appear to be mirrored, anomalies are not perfectly aligned in several locations with the mid-oceanic ridge as expected. Also, the actual evidence shows that there is a variability in magnetic intensity that makes it difficult to determine if it is in fact a flip in the magnetic polarity of the rock or simply a variability of intensity of the same polarity. This makes it difficult to accurately match similar polarities, or mirror images, of either side of the mid-oceanic ridge.

Not only is there variability in intensity, but also magnetic rock polarity varies according to its depth (i.e. from stratum to stratum). In other words, it is not a consistent north or south polarity at a given depth as shown in core samples. To sum up the results, it appears to be not so much a magnetic striping, so much as it appears to be as slurry of polarity – similar to a partial mixing of chocolate and vanilla pudding (Fig. 5). Variability in magnetic polarity at depth, one would not expect from Plate Tectonic Theory if plates are spreading apart from the mid-oceanic ridge centerline at less than a quarter of an inch per year with each magnetized sliver presumably pointing only magnetic north or south: magnetic anomalies.

The wandering magnetic north is said to give proof that the ocean floors were spread from the mid-oceanic ridge. Therefore, let us do a simple test. If both North America and Europe's magnetic north were aligned to fit today's North Pole location and the continents moved to fit according to this alignment, there would be a gap of at least a thousand miles between these continents in its ancient past. North America would need to be moved at least another thousand miles further east to match into Europe. But, if that were so, it would throw off the nice placement such that today's North America wandering magnetic north would not line up with today's Europe's wandering magnetic north. This is not a good fit. Besides that, if there

were wandering magnetic north, why are there not accompanying wandering magnetic south? If magnetic anomalies existed nearly 200 million years, then there should be a magnetic south as well as a magnetic north. But the wandering magnetic south is not typically discussed. A closer look, the wandering magnetic north that is provided in college text books is not shown to be a good correlation fit with the movements of the continents over the eons of time.

Also, there can be no definitive proof that nearly all of the entire source of the ocean's basalt rock came from the mid-oceanic ridge or that the earth's magnetic polarity changed in the epic past. What can be said is that the textbook picture illustrations that tell us that nearly all the sources of magma came from the mid-oceanic ridge system, but does not explain the consistent three to four miles of basalt rock that cover hundreds of thousands of square miles of ocean floor. We can also conclude that simple illustrations of magnetic anomalies that are mirrored on either side of the mid-oceanic ridge with north or south zebra polarity at depth are much too ideal, given that there is no discussion of any slurry polarity—with polarity horizontally and vertically. Therefore, Plate Tectonic models with their simple illustrations can lead to false conclusions with regards to the reality of how the ocean floor actually is, and therefore, how it may have originated. Perhaps the source of most of the mafic rock did not come from the mid-oceanic ridge at all, but perhaps came from a completely different source – deep ocean floor volcanic plumes! Perhaps the ocean floor was entirely lava at the same time before is split along its seams!

VI. Earthquakes, Volcanoes & Ring of Fire

How did earthquakes and volcanoes form? Many earthquakes and volcanoes are located in similar linear vicinities of the earth. The most severe earthquakes are most often located in the

ocean floor along areas of the ocean where it is most trenched with mountains and valleys (i.e. the Ring of Fire). The earthquakes on the continents tend to be along mountain range regions along the 'Ring of Fire', arranged from shallow, intermediate, to deep typically in the direction of the movement that the continents moved away from or towards the rim of the Pacific Ocean. The volcanoes often form above the intermediate zones along the 'ring of fire'. These zones where earthquakes frequently occur are called the **Wadati-Benioff** zones.

In Plate Tectonics Theory, this zone, or plane, is where the lithosphere and asthenosphere destroy itself, called the subduction zone. It is thought that, as subduction occurs, it carries ocean water down with it and becomes mixed in with the mantle rock. As the temperature of the contaminated rock is lowered, the mantle begins to melt and rise. (A contaminate is anything in the rock (i.e. water) not in its pure magma rock mineral form.) The melting often occurs above the intermediate zone and explodes to the surface as volcanoes.

The Wadati-Benioff subduction zones often appear in college text books as a hypothetical idealized slip zone that typically pokes through the mantle transition zone and approaching the earth's outer core. In reality, earthquakes in the oceans or land areas are not neatly delineated, subducting planes, as proposed by the Plate Tectonic Theory. Plate Tectonics does not address why there appears to be less gravity, or mass, along the Wadati-Benioff subduction zones where the majority of earthquakes and volcanoes occur.

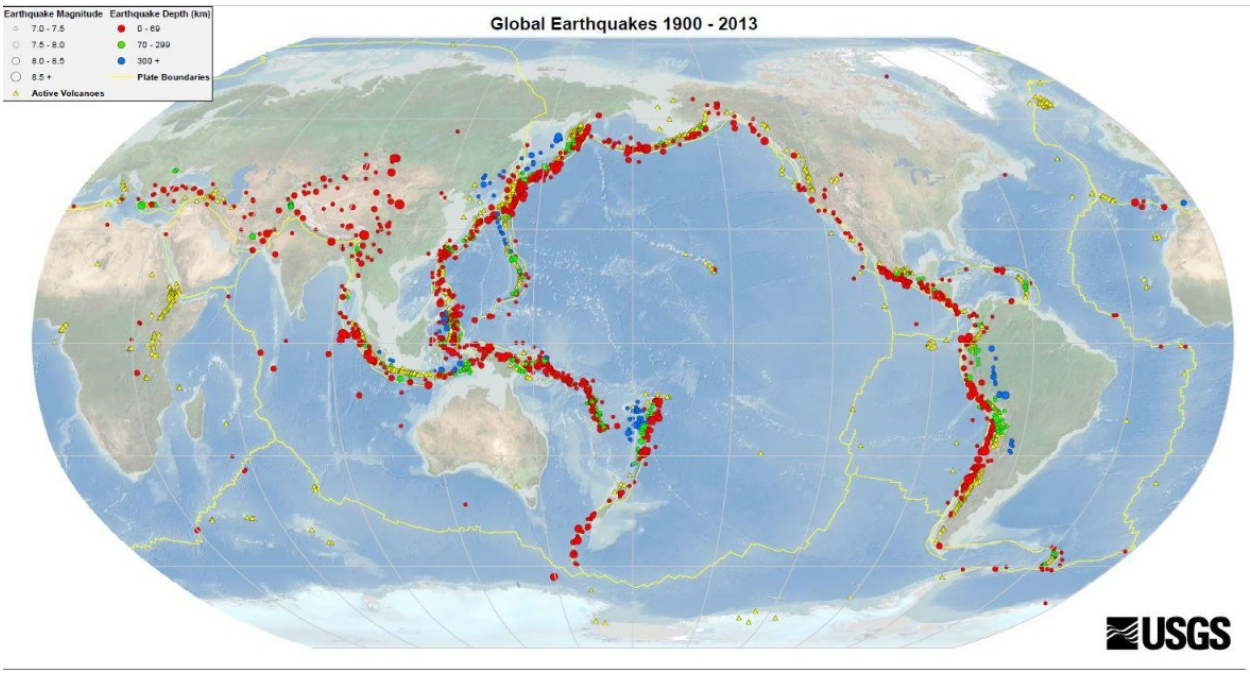


Fig. No. 7

Global Earthquakes at Depth [18]

https://s1.ibtimes.com/sites/www.ibtimes.com/files/styles/embed/public/2015/04/27/world-usgs-map.JPG

Approximately 95% of all earthquakes occur along the 'Ring of Fire' is located along the outer rim of the Pacific Ocean. The foci of these earthquakes range occur in depths from 5 km to 700 km (3 to 420 mi.). The earthquakes have three classifications: shallow (less than 70 km, or 44 mi.), intermediate (70 to 300 km, or 44 to 188 mi.), and deep (greater than 300 km, or 188 mi.). Approximately 90% of earthquakes occur above the 100 km (62 mi.) depth. The Wadati-Benioff zones are seismic regions, or band widths, where earthquakes that tend to occur in a specific direction from shallow to deep. These zones tend to increase in depth toward land, but not always [1] (Fig. 7).

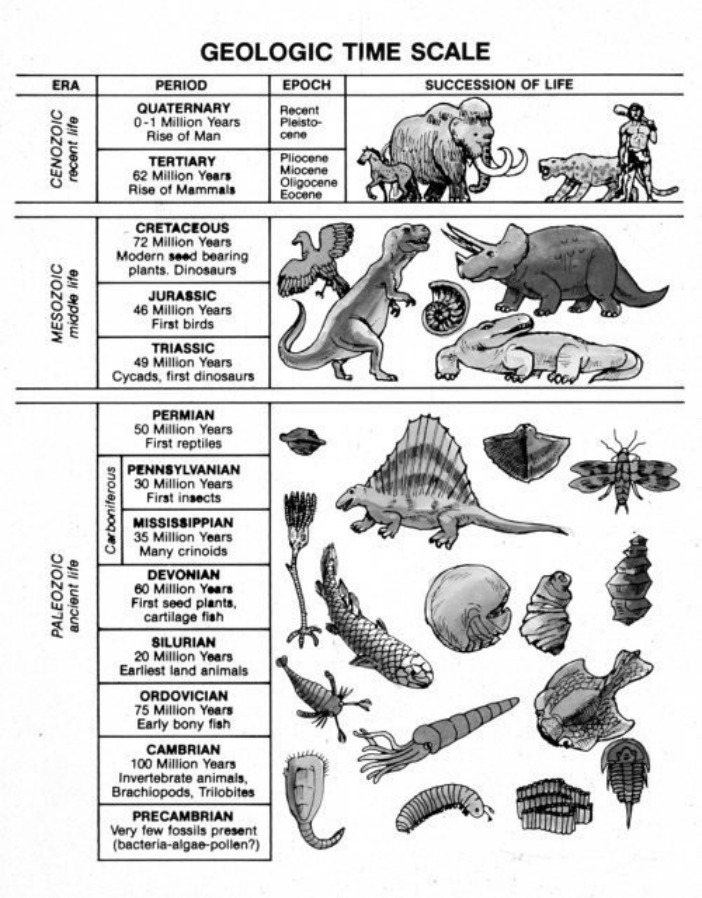
Unlike the Ring of Fire, or ocean floor locations with deep trenches that accompany deep earthquakes, the rest of the world has surprisingly shallow earthquakes in mountainous areas on both on land and in the seas. Along the mid-oceanic ridge, the earthquakes were mostly shallow and few. In Plate Tectonics, many deep earthquakes should have occurred at the mid-oceanic ridge centerline, if all the new ocean floor (i.e. ocean crust, lithosphere and asthenosphere) were created along this rift and has for millions of years. The upwelling of magma at the mid-oceanic ridge were also shallow. For the mountainous areas on land, the earthquakes are mostly shallow, except where there tends to be acute bends in the mountain ranges. Again, at initial appearance, the model of Plate Tectonics does seem to fit the earth's features until there is a deeper analyzes into the details – than flaws begin to arise.

> When seafloor spreading was first proposed, geologists suggested that convection in the mantle consisted of upcurrents coming from deep in the mantle beneath oceanic ridges. Upon reaching the base of the lithosphere, these currents were

[1] Edward J. Tarbuck & Frederick K. Lutgens, *Earth: An Introduction to Physical Geology*, copyright 2005, Pearson Education, Inc., Upper Saddle River, New Jersey 07458, ISBN 0-13-114865, pp 340.

thought to spread laterally and pull the plates apart. Thus, plates were viewed as being carried passively by the flow in the mantle. However, based on physical evidence, it became clear that upwelling beneath oceanic ridges is ***shallow*** and not related to deep convection in the mantle.[1] (emphasis added)

VII. Stratification & Geological Column



The Geological Column [2]
Fig. 8

[1] Edward J. Tarbuck & Frederick K. Lutgens, *Earth: An Introduction to Physical Geology*, copyright 2005, Pearson Education, Inc., Upper Saddle River, New Jersey 07458, ISBN 0-13-114865, pp 70.

[2] https://answersingenesis.org/geology/geologic-time-scale/geologic-column/

- **NOT Approved!**

The Geological Column (Fig. 8), with very few exceptions, does not exist in its complete pattern anywhere on earth, uniformitarians believe it is the ideal arrangement of the earth strata and their accompanying index fossils. The evidence shows that these strata have been laid down over multiple continents as very thin sheets relative to the square miles that they cover. The strata were theoretically laid down according to their age – with the younger strata laid over older strata. Uniformitarians have assigned deep time of millions of years for each stratum for each era of time. In many instances, the real-world stratum column that extends over several continents do have some correlation to the standard Geological Column, but it is often missing major gaps of strata that represents eons of time in the Geological Column. In other cases, according to uniformitarians, much older strata have been found over laying much younger strata.

Many other reasons exist to dismiss the Geological Column from a science logic. There are many discontinuities in the column that show changes in rock type over said millions of years, but what is often missing is the erosion evidence of fossil rivers and fossil ditches between these discontinuities that should have been too numerous to count, but there are very few. If extreme details are found in fossils, why are these fossil erosions evidence not abundant. Erosion should not simply be found between stratum. Each rock sediment layers are often found with a high percentage of purity of salt, sand and limestone. The salt is pure enough in some locations that it does not need to be processed for consumption. This grand scale sorting process of the past is not taking place today. With today's natural erosion processes, there are simply too many impurities of other rock type, organic material found. Not only are the earth strata in the Geological Column said to be organized from young to old in depth, but it has also been laid

down in six megasequences. This sorting conundrum will be later discussed in Part 3, Geological Column.

The Grand Canyon is a great example. The canyon cuts through strata that is nearly a mile deep. Uniformitarians say that the Colorado River was the primary mechanism that cut through this rock canyon over millions of years. They recognize the existence of the river through the ages, but fail to recognize that the rock strata that it cut through are layers of sandstone that represent several ages of desert where the river never became dry. Also, the canyon strata have virtually no evidence of any fossil rivers or ditches. At the same time, the rock strata tell a different story. Each stratum has a high grade of purity. Its strata contain megasequences from top to bottom. Are we to believe that this area of Colorado has almost always been dessert dry, except for the Colorado River that has always flowed continuously for millions of years? Multiple ultra-thin strata were laid down over hundreds of square miles with little erosional evidence of a local floods.

VIII. Metamorphic Rock Mystery

Metamorphic rock comes from parent rock that is typically sedimentary or igneous rock, and sometimes other metamorphic rock. Metamorphism means to "change form" to a different mineral and texture by the application of tremendous heat and pressure.

> The folded and metamorphosed rocks … were once flat-lying sedimentary strata. Compressional forces of unimaginable magnitude and temperatures …
>
> Extensive areas of metamorphic rocks are exposed on every continent in the relatively flat regions known as shields. These metamorphic regions are found in eastern Canada, Brazil, Africa, India, Australia, and Greenland. Moreover, metamorphic rocks are an important component of many mountain belts, including the Alps and the Appalachians, where the

> make up a large portion of a mountain's crystalline core. Even those portions of the stable continental interiors that are covered by sedimentary rocks are underlain by metamorphic basement rocks. In these settings the metamorphic rocks are highly deformed and intruded by large igneous masses. Indeed, significant parts of Earth's continental crust are composed of metamorphic and associated igneous rocks.[1]

The mystery of metamorphic rock is that so much of it is found on the surface of the earth – the very place you would least expect it - and yet, it requires incredible heat and pressure to form these rocks from other sedimentary or igneous rocks. Most geophysicist have attempted to explain this formation, believing it must have taken place at great depths in the earth where there was great heat and pressure to create metamorphic rock from the parent rock. Why metamorphic rock is so common at the surface of the earth on mountains and the plains is puzzling. It is well-known that the deeper the depth, the greater the pressure and temperature – similar to greater water depths.

Therefore, to attain these great temperatures and pressures to create metamorphism, geophysicists theorized that these rocks formed millions of years ago having great depths of overburden earth. The following summarizes rock metamorphism finding from experiments that have been done with regard to temperature and depth as to when metamorphism occurs.

[1] Edward J. Tarbuck & Frederick K. Lutgens, *Earth: An Introduction to Physical Geology*, copyright 2005, Pearson Education, Inc., Upper Saddle River, New Jersey 07458, ISBN 0-13-114865, pp 244.

1. Low-grade metamorphism - formed at depths of approximately five miles, with starting temperatures of 100° C - 200° C.[1]
2. High-grade metamorphism – formed at depths of 30 to 40 miles at temperatures of 600° C to 800° C. [2]
3. Ultrahigh-pressure minerals (UHPm) - require an overburden of depths greater than 70 miles. These UHPm exist in inclusions in garnets, zircons, and other hard material. Other UHPm are coesite, stishovite, and microdiamonds are produced by meteorite impacts.[3]
4. Microdiamonds and other ultra-high-pressure minerals - often found in mountainous areas all over the world.

Microdiamonds have commonly been found with other ultra high-pressure and high-pressure minerals at many locations.[4] These include central China, Antarctica, Brazil, Europe, Mali, East Greenland, central Asia, the Himalayas, Indonesia, Norway, northeast Canada, and French Guiana.[5] The microdiamonds and ultrahigh-pressure minerals are commonly

---

[1] Edward J. Tarbuck & Frederick K. Lutgens, *Earth: An Introduction to Physical Geology*, copyright 2005, Pearson Education, Inc., Upper Saddle River, New Jersey 07458, ISBN 0-13-114865, pp 261.

[2] Edward J. Tarbuck & Frederick K. Lutgens, *Earth: An Introduction to Physical Geology*, copyright 2005, Pearson Education, Inc., Upper Saddle River, New Jersey 07458, ISBN 0-13-114865, pp 263 (see Fig. 8.24).

[3] *Journal of Creation*, Vol. 29(2), 2015, 'Metamorphic rocks can form at shallow depths', by Micheal J. Oard, ISSN 1036-2916, p. 6.

[4] *Journal of Creation*, Vol. 23(2), 209, 'Microdiamonds found in Japanese forearc', by Micheal J. Oard, ISSN 1036-2916, p. 13.
- Oard, M.J., The uniformitarian challenge of ultrahigh-pressure minerals, *Journal of Creation* **20**(1):5-6, 2006

[5] *Journal of Creation*, Vol. 23(2), 209, 'Microdiamonds found in Japanese forearc', by Micheal J. Oard, ISSN 1036-2916, p. 13.
- Liou, J.G., Ernst, W.G. and Ogasawara, Y., Petrochemical and tectonic processes of UHP/HP terranes I: Preface, *International Geology Review* **44**: 765-769, 2002.

> located in structurally high mountainous areas.[1] They also come from what uniformitarian scientists consider as continental rocks. So, uniformitarian scientist must postulate that continental rocks were somehow forced down by "continental collisions: or "subduction" to depths of a few hundred kilometres and then, somehow, forced back up to the surface again.[2]

So how did all this low-grade to high-grade metamorphism of continental rock come from five miles to seventy miles in depth to be exposed at the surface of the earth? Geophysicists cannot explain why there is such an abundance of these metamorphic minerals at the earth's surface. To put this depth in perspective, the average depth of the earth's crust over the mantle is less than 17.5 miles! Crustal rocks of the stable continental interiors average about a twenty-five mile depth. It might exceed forty miles in some mountainous regions.[3] Given the earth's surface where much of the high-grade metamorphism continental rock is found, and the supposed depths that they are said to have formed, much of it would have formed in deep in the lithosphere, the upper mantle – not in the continental crust! The ultrahigh-pressure minerals (UHPm), which are supposedly coming from a seventy miles depth, would place it well below

---

- Cartigny, P. *et al.*, Early Proterozoic ultrahigh pressure metamorphism: evidence from microdiamonds, *Science* **304**:853-855, 2004.
- Dobrzhinetskaya, L.F. *et al.*, Microdiamonds in high-grade metamorphic rocks of the Western Gneiss region, Norway, *Geology* **23**:597-600, 1995.

[1] *Journal of Creation*, Vol. 23(2), 209, 'Microdiamonds found in Japanese forearc', by Micheal J. Oard, ISSN 1036-2916, p. 13.
- Platt, J.P., Exhumation of high-pressure rocks: a review of concepts and processes, *Terra Nova* 5:121, 1993.

[2] *Journal of Creation*, Vol. 29(2), 2015, 'Metamorphic rocks can form at shallow depths', by Micheal J. Oard, ISSN 1036-2916, p. 13.

[3] Edward J. Tarbuck & Frederick K. Lutgens, *Earth: An Introduction to Physical Geology*, copyright 2005, Pearson Education, Inc., Upper Saddle River, New Jersey 07458, ISBN 0-13-114865, pp 368.

the upper limit of the mantle, specifically at approximately the boundary between the lithosphere and the asthenosphere![1] Remember that most of the metamorphic rock was derived from continental rock, averaging 25-mile depth, not from mantle rock. Also, the rock that became metamorphic rock, while pushed up in mountainous areas, still remain as relatively flat layers – not pushed up vertically from the depths from the upper mantle.

Reasons given by uniformitarians as to how metamorphic rock emerged to the earth's surface over millions of years include slivers subducted miles under the surface of the earth, then somehow emerged miles upward towards the earth's surface. Second was 'isostacy' where mountains float and emerged from miles below to the surface like an iceberg over millions of years. Third was by the process of massive erosion of sediment, miles down to the metamorphic rock.

Reasons why each of these options should be disregarded include the earth surface is too vast and full of metamorphic rock to be formed by emerging slivers from the subduction process. Also, subduction could not have formed in many places of the earth, such as the Canadian shields, since the continental interior is not where subduction is said to have taken place on the earth. Therefore, subduction is not a logical mechanism to have formed the vast metamorphic shields. If 'isostacy' were the mechanism that formed the mountains, it does not seem reasonable since the Himalayan Mountains are five miles high, given that its roots of buoyancy mountain ranges should not be greater than its height. Its buoyancy limit defines the maximum depth that it can be buried. Therefore, five miles seems to be the approximate maximum depth

[1] Edward J. Tarbuck & Frederick K. Lutgens, *Earth: An Introduction to Physical Geology*, copyright 2005, Pearson Education, Inc., Upper Saddle River, New Jersey 07458, ISBN 0-13-114865, pp 366.

limit. For this reason, there should not be any metamorphic rock in the core of the mountains that would require more heat and pressure than provided at depths greater than five miles. But, instead, there are all grades of metamorphic rocks at the core of many of the world mountain ranges, including ultrahigh-pressure minerals (UHPm) and diamonds. This means these mountains had to have been at least 30-40 miles in depth to form high grade metamorphic rock. At the current height of today's mountains, it is difficult enough to imagine how even low-grade metamorphic rock came about, let alone how middle to high-metamorphic rock came about, considering the 10 to 40 miles initial depth required. Remember, these are continental derived metamorphic rock, not mantle derived metamorphic rock.

Isostacy is not a reasonable option for another reason. This option implies that the denser metamorphic rock somehow became buoyant at the surface. First, how is this physically possible? Second, even if it were so, some evidence must exist of rock having slid downhill away from the emerging buoyant mountain range for, perhaps a mile, in some areas. But instead, it was the many mountain ranges worldwide that have moved nearly a hundred of miles horizontally with highly deformed and folded rock layers. Third, how is it that the sediment had eroded more than five miles deep? There is no place on earth that one can say erosion is anywhere close to being that deep. The Grand Canyon is only about a mile deep! How do whole continental shields, such as the Canadian Shields, that were supposedly tens of miles in depth, erode so uniformly to these depths? And if so, by what processes? Where did all the overburdened and eroded material go?

> Most major mountain belts show evidence of enormous horizontal forces that have folded, faulted, and generally deformed large sections of Earth's crust.[1]

> Noteworthy features of most compressional mountains are the fold-and-thrust belts. These mountainous terrains often result from the deformation of thick sequences of shallow marine sedimentary rocks similar to those that make up the passive continental margins of the Atlantic. [2]

Many mountain ranges are made up of 'fold-and-thrust belts', indicating tremendous horizontal forces. The plains typically do not have 'overthrust' features. Many of these mountains, made up of sedimentary rock, also have rock cores made up of metamorphic and igneous rock. It is a mystery as to why mountain cores are made up of metamorphic rock. As per Plate Tectonic Theory, horizontal forces of solid rock moving plates inches per year cannot deliver nearly the horizontal forces needed to create the heat and pressure to form metamorphic rock to permeate throughout the hundreds of miles width of many mountain ranges, other than just the line of supposed applied force by subduction.

Even if adequate horizontal forces could be applied, these forces could not be adequately transferred through the rock of the mountain region over time. If the mountains were compressed, the force would crush the rock mass at the point where it was pushed. If the mountains were pulled, the rock would tension fracture since it is much stronger in compression than in tension. The only way these mountains could have formed with folds and overthrust was

---

[1] Edward J. Tarbuck & Frederick K. Lutgens, *Earth: An Introduction to Physical Geology*, copyright 2005, Pearson Education, Inc., Upper Saddle River, New Jersey 07458, ISBN 0-13-114865, pp 416.

[2] Edward J. Tarbuck & Frederick K. Lutgens, *Earth: An Introduction to Physical Geology*, copyright 2005, Pearson Education, Inc., Upper Saddle River, New Jersey 07458, ISBN 0-13-114865, pp 426.

if the sediment that makes up the mountains were initially level sheets that moved as one unit-body mass.[1] (Fig. 40)

IX. Slide, Stretch, but not Ride!

Uniformitarians believe that the Seamount Chain in the Atlantic Ocean between South America and South Africa are mantle plumes that might have contributed to continental rifting. Whether it is single point expulsion of plumes, or a linear uplift of the mid-oceanic ridge, Newtonian physics does not allow these newly created vertical and horizontal forces to overcome the friction forces needed to allow thousands of square miles of ocean basin tectonic plates to move away from its source. There should not be any kind of symmetric tracks that was left behind in the ocean floor. The following is a popular example of how Plate Tectonics leaves its tracks:

> Evidence for the role that mantle plumes play in continental rifting is available from passive continental margins, the former sites of rifting. In several regions on both sides of the Atlantic, continental rifting was preceded by crustal uplift and massive outpourings of basaltic lava. Examples include the Etendeka flood basalts of southwest Africa and the Parana basalt province of South America. [2]

There should not be any long, linear, plume tracks left over – and certainly not any ancient plumes that just happen to be symmetrical and along the same transverse fractures to the mid-oceanic ridge as does the Seamount Chain, which are said to be millions of years apart. As

---

[1] Cliff Ollier and Colin Pain, The Origin of Mountains, Routledge, London, copyright 2000, ISBN 0-415-19889-5 (hbk), pg. 276-277

[2] Edward J. Tarbuck & Frederick K. Lutgens, *Earth: An Introduction to Physical Geology*, copyright 2005, Pearson Education, Inc., Upper Saddle River, New Jersey 07458, ISBN 0-13-114865, pp 403.

the ocean crest was created at the mid-oceanic ridge, it fills in behind it filling any transverse trench, but hundreds of these deep transverse trenches extend from continent to continent. The plumes might be found on one side, but highly unlikely to be along the same symmetric or continuous line about both sides. Why did ancient hot spots form symmetrical to the mid-oceanic ridge? According to the Plate Tectonic Theory, continents are riding on the lithosphere plates (Fig. 1), not sliding on them. The lithosphere plates are created at the mid-oceanic ridge and destroyed by subduction at the trenches of the Pacific Ocean. The plates move inches per year on top of a circulating lithosphere/asthenosphere. Since the ocean floor is moving like a conveyor belt, this means that the creation of the ocean floor and its movement must be solely about the mid-oceanic ridge centerline. This means that everything between the mid-oceanic ridge and the continents has been replaced with newer ocean floor – destroying any track of continental rift, other than parallel lava wakes flow away the mid-oceanic ridge – which is nearly non-existent. Did the hot spots concurrently and symmetrically move away from the mid-oceanic ridge? How do single point plumes play a part in continental rift, especially since the hot spots are not along the mid-oceanic ridge centerline. The hot spot should not have any horizontal force on any continental boundary, similar the mid-oceanic ridge. But if it did, it would have a singular ripple effect, as dropping a rock into a pond, pushing outward on both continent a mid-oceanic ridge. There is no apparent 'pond ripple' effect on the Atlantic Mid-oceanic ridge.

Hundreds of parallel, transverse fractures three thousand miles long cut through the Mid-Atlantic Ridge that connects North America to Europe and South America to Africa– not to mention hundreds more in all the oceans of the world. These fractures are parallel and show near precisely where these continents were once connected. Most have relatively the same depth. Many of these fractures are only fifty miles apart and do not cross or waver from each other. In

order for this to occur with such precision, it had to be a single cataclysmic event of continents sliding, not riding. If it did ride, how does Plate Tectonic have memory to leave behind any trail of transverse fractures or debris (i.e island chains), since by its very conveyor belt nature; it is created at the mid-oceanic ridge, and therefore; should be continually filling in any transverse trench as new ocean floor is created. But this is not the case. If it were true, there should be only parallel pattern to the mid-oceanic ridge, not perpendicular, or transverse fractures. But in reality, we have both.

Some of the most convincing evidences are parallel linear features in the oceans and seas that are hundreds of miles away which extend off the continental edges. Other linear features are the paths of the movement of breaking of land masses. The following features have been left in the wake of breaking continental masses which has moved over the ocean floor at incredible speeds over the surface of the earth. Lord Howe Rise in the Tasman Sea between Australia and New Zealand has the shape that parallels the eastern edge of Australia. Macquarie Ridge to the south and Kermadec Trench to the north extend off of New Zealand. Eddies formed in the magma as New Guinea rotated 180°, with New Britain and New Ireland seemingly rotating further counter-clockwise as if being at the end of a snapped whip. The Scotia Ridge, which forms a hairpin shape, extends off the south tip of Cape Horn, South America, and Antarctica off the Antarctica Peninsula. The Falkland Fracture Zone extends from the south tip of Africa to just north of the south tip of South America, precisely where the south tip of South America once wrapped around Africa, touching Madagascar. The Caribbean Islands ridge extends off the northern limits of the Andes Mountains and connect with Central America. These are a few examples that show correlation that these linear features in the world oceans must have been

created at the same time that the continents tore apart, resulting from the continents sliding over all the ocean floors being covered with this malleable, slick material – water and lava.

Generally, Plate Tectonic Theory does attempt to answer some of these ocean floor features (i.e. hot spots, mid-oceanic ridge, transverse fractures, volcanoes and earthquakes), but it does not adequately explain why these features still exist in their present locations and conditions –especially given the said millions of years and the given precision of each of these ocean floor features. As further research into the details of Plate Tectonics at specific sites and conditions, the theory begins to unravel.

Part 3 – Noah's Upheaval (NU) Flood Theory

- Gives resolutions to unanswered questions raised from the Plate Tectonic Theory from Part 2.

The Noah's Upheaval Flood Theory, NU Flood Theory, is a new Genesis Flood theory. It is an alternative theory to the Catastrophic Plate Tectonic Theory (most popular Creationist Flood model with similarities to the Plate Tectonic Theory) or the Plate Tectonic Theory. Why do we need a new theory? If your premise is wrong, your conclusions are going to be wrong. There are the facts of geology, then there are the interpretations of the facts with underlying assumptions which all models are developed to explain the facts. Do not be surprised that NU Flood Theory is so very different model than previous geology models because it starts with a totally different premise, and therefore; a different interpretation. It is a complete biblical, geological Flood theory with much supporting evidence that is based on the sciences of physic, geology and astronomy. NU Flood Theory makes the case, as a Crime Scene Investigator, CSI, that all the major features of the earth that we see today, including the strata below, is the result of the earth's flip that resulted in the Genesis Flood. Therefore, the earth flip is central to this theory. Understandably, the earth flip will most likely be the most difficult concept for the reader to accept, but it will be the key to unraveling many of the major mysteries of geology! Please join me in this fascinating investigation and amazing discoveries.

I. First Cause – A Solar System Blast!

a. First Cause

If the earth flipped, what was the cause and what evidence is there? The evidence that the earth flipped is the earth's topography on land and in the ocean that will later be developed. What was the 'first cause' or mechanism that caused the earth to flip and caused PanNoah, one

continental mass before the Genesis Flood, to divide? There are two physical possibilities for the 'first cause'. Either it was internal or external forces to the earth. If it were internal forces, it would have had to be the stirring of magma within the core of the Earth. But what would have caused the magma to stir? Many physicists do not believe that it is possible for the earth to flip except by an external force since the earth is similar to a gyroscope. This leads to a cosmic mechanism. If true, then according to Newton's theory, "where there is an action, there must be a reaction." Therefore, there must have been an external cosmic force that resulted in the internal forces of the earth that caused the Flood. This author has concluded, after seeing the evidence, that it was an asteroid blast, or storm, throughout the entire solar system that came in waves - not a close encounter of another planet, a very large asteroid/moon, or a stream of asteroids. The following discussion gives further support for the NU Flood Theory.

b. A Solar System Blast!

The Bible says that "all," not some, of the fountains of the great deep broke on the first day of the Genesis Flood event. This strongly implies that nearly all the earth's tectonic destructive forces were initiated, and most likely occurred, during the first days, if not hours, of the Flood that changed the entire face of the earth.

Genesis 7:11 (KJV)

> 11. In the six hundredth year of Noah's life, in the second month, the seventeenth day of the month, the same day were **all** the fountains of the great deep broken up, and the windows of heaven were opened. [1]

Our Flood Theory starts with a cosmic storm of asteroids that blasted our sun and every single planet in our solar system, including our own moon and earth. It may have come in

[1] Holy Bible, KJV, Genesis 9:1 (KJV)

waves. The four largest planets in our solar system -- Saturn, Uranus, Neptune, and Jupiter were struck. They were hit with such force that the meteorite debris was ejected out into outer space. In time, the surrounding cloud of debris around each planet became captured by their huge gravitational force to later coalesce to form the rings around their equators. (As the four largest planets, the earth and moon may have also captured smaller meteorite debris that may have interlaced between each other for centuries after the Flood. These sudden flashes of lights that seem to dance in the night skies would have frightened the ancients, giving reason to create mythology and built megaliths for astronomy and worship.)

Fig. 9 [1]

Meteorites strike the earth during the Flood event.

The planets and their moons, including our own moon all show evidence of extensive meteorite impacts. Venus and Uranus do not rotate counter-clockwise as do other planets as viewed from the solar system's North Pole. As evidence, of this asteroid storm, both Venus and Uranus show evidence of having rotated differently from their original axis orientation. Venus

[1] https://cdn.images.express.co.uk/img/dynamic/78/590x/asteroid-mapped-space-nasa-862780.jpg

rotates clockwise, while all other planes rotate counter-clockwise. Uranus rotates "on its side" [1]. Mars and Venus, as do other planets, not only show evidence of asteroid impact, but also clear evidence of having flipped. The evidence for Mars flipping is the upheaval flooding of its great deep, creating a canyon believed to be formed by floodwaters, four times greater than the Grand Canyon. The evidence for the flip of Venus is its boiling surface with recent meteor impacts. Venus highest mountain is Mount Maxwell with a 36,000 feet peak, a mile higher than Mt. Everest, and a rift valley that extends 5,600 miles. [2] Our solar system captured many asteroids, which became moons of the planets or were caught into an orbit called the 'asteroid belt' between Mars and Jupiter. Some may have been caught in a much larger oblong orbit around our sun called the Kuiper belt objects (KBO). These objects may not have been kicked out of orbit by a Planet 'X' as is now a popular belief. [3] Even our sun's equatorial orbit is out of phase by 6° with the other orbits of the other planets of our solar system.

> Prior work found that the zone in which the eight major planets orbit the sun is tilted by about 6 degrees compared to the sun's equator. This discrepancy has long been a mystery in astronomy. [4]

---

[1] The Creation Club, David Rives Ministries, David Rives, The Unique Atmosphere of Venus, July-Aug 2020.

[2] Acts & Facts, Institute for Creation Research, Lisle, Ph.D., The Solar System: Venus, Vol. 37, No. 2, September 2013.

[3] Michael D. Lemonick, *Scientific America; The Search for Planet X - is it hidden in the solar system's outer reaches*, February 2016, www.ScientificAmerica.com, pg 30.

[4] https://www.space.com/34448-planet-nine-solar-system-tilt.html

Meteorites captured our earth and our moon for a very brief time as they rifled through our entire solar system during the time of the epic cosmic storm. The earth reeled like a drunkard, or like a hut in a wind storm.[1] The sum total of the gravitational force of all the asteroid debris acted as if there were trillions of ropes pulling unevenly at different locations on the surface of the earth. The asteroid gravitational force captured the lopsided earth where PanNoah's excess weight was already on one side of the planet. The earth began to wobble and tilt. As the earth began to tilt, its angular momentum began to heat up its outer surface, becoming more molten. As the earth's outer shells became more molten, they became slightly oblong and began to flip like a rocking, capsizing boat. This is similar to a hundred men, each pulling rope on one side, each rope tied to the top of the mast of the boat to cause it to capsize. The earth most likely did not flip because of the meteorite impacts themselves. Instead, the asteroid storm blast caused centripetal forces, due to the slight rotational change in direction and magnitude of the mass of the earth, causing the earth to eventually flip and also causing the earth to slightly expand. Magma and Floodwaters immediately began to be expelled out of hundreds of thousands of plumes from the mantle (...***all*** the fountains of the great deep...) forming volcanoes over the entire surface of the earth. This decompression of the mantle, or mantle rock decompression melting, at the transition zone 400 km to 660 km (275 mi. to 410 mi.) depth resulted in mantle magma laminating the entire earth's surface that has cooled to become today's basalt ocean floor. The ocean floor ranges from 3 km to 15 km (2 mi. to 9 mi.) depth and averaging about 7 km (4 mi.) depth.[2] The outpouring of magma and floodwaters literally floated

[1] Isaiah 24: 20 (NIV)

[2] Edward J. Tarbuck & Frederick K. Lutgens, *Earth: An Introduction to Physical Geology*, copyright 2005, Pearson Education, Inc., Upper Saddle River, New Jersey 07458, ISBN 0-13-114865, pp 368.

and separated the less dense upper 'supercontinental crust' – the author has called 'PanNoah' (Fig. 10) from the upper surface of the mantle. The earth's inner core, outer core and the mantle rotated out from underneath the continental PanNoah's crust, similar to a magician quickly pulling a tablecloth out from under the unbroken china dishes, leaving the dishes on the table. The upsurge of magma and Floodwaters floated and displaced the pre-Flood ocean floor onto the land, later known as the Cambrian rock layer.

Today, the earth is traveling at approximately one thousand miles per hour at the equator, likely the same rotational speed existing before the Flood. Any significant change in its axis of rotation would result in adjacent rock slamming into each other at the earth's surface in a similar manner as three laughing teenagers' weight shifts outward in the backseat of the car as the car makes a tight turn. Furthermore, the shifting rock could compress to the point of melting. Also, just as the teenagers' weight shifted outward, likewise the earth slightly expanded. This resulted in decompression of the mantle transition zone, or mantle rock decompression melting, which also added to the outpouring of magma and the Floodwaters to expel out onto the world ocean floors – instantly creating the "fountains of the deep" with a hundred million plume, blow torches.

Is there evidence of an asteroid blast that struck the earth as seen with nearly every planet and their moons in our solar system? Dr. Andrew Snelling, a creation geologist, ask the question as to what might have initiated the Flood. Geologists have found mounting evidence of meteorites that have struck the earth during the catastrophic Flood event. The following are his findings and conclusion.

> Not surprisingly, fossil meteorites have been discovered in various layers of the Flood's geologic record. One of the most meteorite-dense areas in the world known to date is found in Ordovician limestone beds in central

and southern Sweden. These deposits are among the earliest laid down by the Flood. [1]

"We cannot be certain whether God used an asteroid or swarms of asteroids to begin the Flood event and the resulting breakup of the earth's crust into plates. However, we do find evidence that asteroids were striking the earth at catastrophic rates during the Flood and that these asteroids were spread over the earth's surface. Asteroids surely contributed greatly to the horrific and violent geologic events that took place during God's year of judgment of the earth. [2]

c. The Earth Flipped – Supported by Sir Isaac Newton and Albert Einstein.

Two of the world's most prominent scientist of all times have supported the idea of an earth flip -- Sir Isaac Newton and Albert Einstein. In his book *New Theory of the Earth*, mathematician William Whiston dedicated his book to Isaac Newton. Isaac Newton endorsed the theories as plausible and reasonable. [3] In *Earth's Shifting Crust: A Key to Some Basic Problems of Earth Science* by Charles Hapgood, Albert Einstein gives his support to a potential earth flip. [4] Immanuel Velikovsky, a popular controversial science, geology and history author in

---

[1] Did Meteors Trigger Noah's Flood? Dr. Andrew A. Snelling on January 1, 2012; last featured December 12, 2012

- https://answersingenesis.org/the-flood/did-meteors-trigger-noahs-flood/

[2] Did Meteors Trigger Noah's Flood? Dr. Andrew A. Snelling on January 1, 2012; last featured December 12, 2012

- https://answersingenesis.org/the-flood/did-meteors-trigger-noahs-flood/

[3] Charles H. Hapgood (1958). *Earth's Shifting Crust: A Key to Some Basic Problems of Earth Science*, introduction by Einstein. Pantheon Books.OCLC 150491536.

[4] National Geographics, *Why Newton Believed a Comet Caused Noahs Flood,* Mark Strauss,

- *https://www.nationalgeographic.com/news/2017/01/comet-new-years-eve-newton-flood-bible-gravity-science/*

the 1960s wrote several books, *World in Upheaval, Worlds in Collision, and Ages in Chaos,* who makes a case that Mars and Venus came near the earth and flip it.[1]

Charles Hapgood states that while the issue of an 'earth flip' may not be a burning question that many scientists are asking today, it was a hotly debated issue in the recent past. Given the new data, perhaps it should be reconsidered.

> Of all the questions that have been debated in the sciences of the earth, perhaps the most fundamental and the most involved is that of the stability of the poles. This question has bedeviled science for about a hundred years. Despite every effort to establish the view that the poles have shifted during the history of the earth, or to prove that they have not, the controversy is just as lively today as ever. [2]

The two most popular biblical Flood models today are the Hydroplate Flood Model by Dr. Walter Brown and the Catastrophic Plate Tectonic Flood Model by Dr. Steve Austin. Pioneers in both models have proposed that the earth axes have flipped, wobbled, or shifted. In Walter Brown.s book, *In the Beginning: Compelling Evidence for the Creation and the Flood*, he has a section called, 'Changing Tilt of Earth's Axis' that speaks to an earth tilt during the Flood event.[3] Geophysicist, Dr. John Baumgardner, a charter member and proponent of Catastrophic Plate Tectonics, believes that perhaps the earth flipped in order to explain why there are sharp contacts between multiple sedimentary layers that cover every continent of the earth:

> A wobble or flip-flop of this huge gyroscope (earth) would generate large-scale, directional currents of water over the continents that were able to transport and deposit the vast quantity of sediments seen in stratigraphic record. A different

---

[1] Velikovsky, Immanuel. *Worlds in Collision* (New York, NY: Pocket Books, 1977), ISBN 0-671-82717-0, pp. 60.

[2] *Earth's Shifting Crust,* pg. 24.

[3] http://www.creationscience.com/onlinebook/HydroplateOverview2.html#wp1197621

current direction would suddenly dominate in a particular location with a different sediment source. [1]

If we contend that the earth's axis wobbled or shifted, then we should also agree that the same mechanism that allowed the earth to gyrate must also be the same mechanism that allows it to potentially flip.

The Bible also gives references to an earth wobble or flip in the past and in the future. Job 38:12-13 (NIV) speak of a potential earth flip during the Flood event. Isaiah 24:1 (The New English Bible) is future potential earth flip during 'last days' prophetic passage of God's judgement of mankind. These and other verses and will be discussed in further detail in the 'Biblical Support!' section.

Job 38:12- 13 (NIV)

12. "Have you ever given orders to the morning, or shown the dawn its place,
13. that it might take the earth by the edges and shake the wicked out of it? [2]

Isaiah 24:1 (The New English Bible)

1. Beware, the Lord will empty the earth, split it open and ***turn it upside down***, and scatter its inhabitants. [3] (emphasis added)

II. PanNoah's Breakup Illustrated.

Genesis 1:9 (NIV)

9. And God said, "Let the water under the sky be gathered to one place, …" [4]

---

[1] Dr. John D. Morris, *The Global Flood, Unlocking Earth's Geologic History,* copyright 2012, first printing, Creation Research, P.O. Box 59029, Dallas, TX 75229, *ISBN: 978-1-935587-12-5*, Library of Congress Catalog Number: 2012949341, *pp.* 122.

[2] Job 38:12- 13 (NIV)

[3] Isaiah 24:1 (The New English Bible)

[4] Genesis 1:9 (NIV)

Genesis 1:9-10, implies that at the time of creation that God created the ocean. If at the time of creation, God gathered all the water into one ocean, not many oceans, therefore; the logical conclusion would be that what was left was dry land that must have also been gathered into one place as one continental uni-mass. This author has named this uni-landmass ***PanNoah***, with in the context of the NU Flood Theory.

The breakup of the continents from one uni-landmass, PanNoah, gives evidence that the earth flipped. Support is not only that the continents broke up, but also the path it broke up. The following are illustrations of PanNoah -- its break-up and the path it took.[1]

[1] This author came to the conclusion that the earth flipped independently of other authors, such as Velikovsky, based entirely on the fractures in the ocean floors and the path and break-up of the continents. But with regards to an axis shift and the catastrophic result to our earth are similar.

- Velikovsky, Immanuel. *Earth in Upheaval* (New York, NY: Pocket Books, 1977), ISBN 0-671-83454-1, pp. 124-127.

PanNoah

Fig. No. 10
PanNoah

In **Noah's Upheaval Flood Theory**, this was what the placement of continents may have looked like as one piece before Noah's Flood – this author has called ***PanNoah***. Notice its clean fit relative to Pangaea in the Plate Tectonic Theory (Fig. 2). Africa lies below India. India did not drift northward to form the Himalaya Mountains. Europe had a north/south, instead of east/west orientation. Central America was included. Australia and Antarctica fit nicely into Africa's eastern border. All the continents are shown as near true to scale as possible, given that it is shown in two dimensions, not as a three-dimensional sphere. Also, several of the continents are not the exact shape as today's continents since they have been slightly warped, but not morphed, for best fit. The following figures shows the path that PanNoah took before and during its break-up. The clockwise breakup of the continents determined their shape. The features in all the ocean floors and all the topographical features on all the landmasses give evidence to this catastrophic event, determining where all the continents once fit by the direction and offset of the ocean floor. In other words, the fit of PanNoah was not merely a pretty fit, but was primarily discovered to be so by the patterns of its break-up on the once molten ocean floor that covered the entire surface of the earth. PanNoah was flung and floated over the fountains exploding molten magma and water to the surface. Its path can be seen over the South and West Pacific Ocean. In reality, it was more the earth's mantle that rotated out from under PanNoah than it was the PanNoah rotating over the surface of the earth. The NU Upheaval Flood Theory model has incorporated these finding as if it were a CSI investigation of a continental train wreck. The land mass colors are indicative of how they broke up and separated from each other.

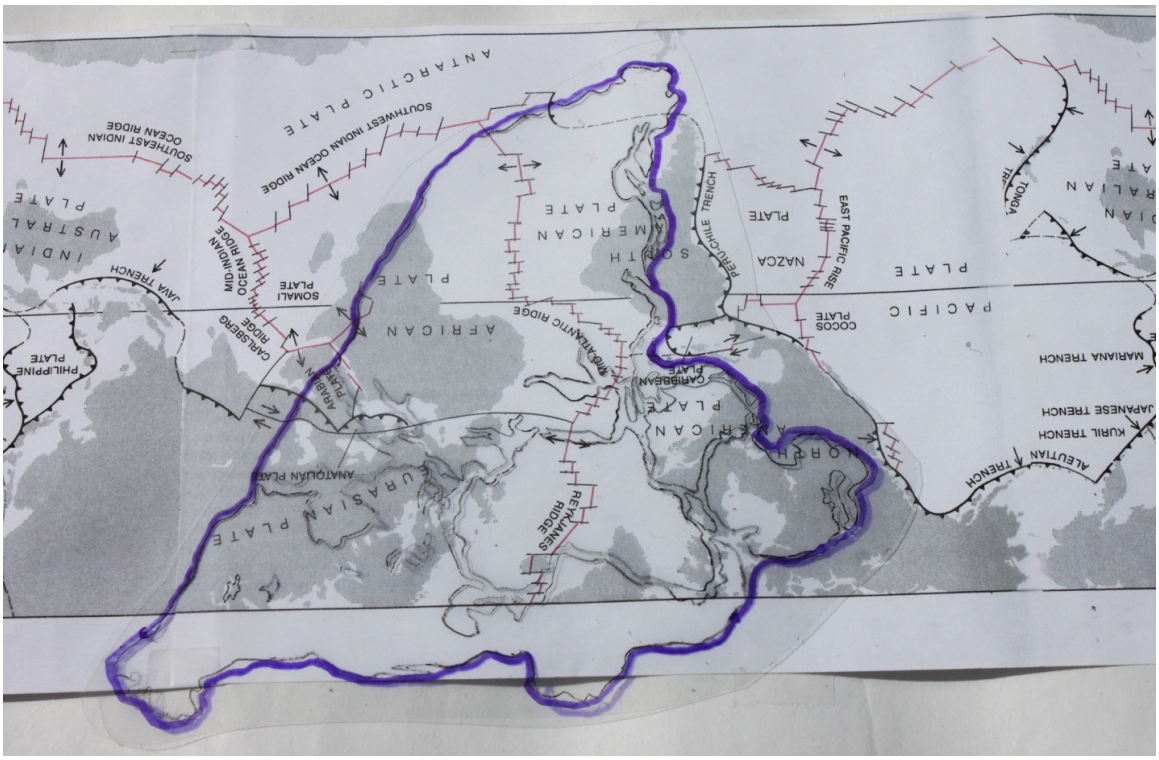


Fig. No. 11
PanNoah Path #1

PanNoah is shown before the earth flipped 360° and before it rotated clockwise 180°. The Earth's axis and continents are shown in their potential initial positions before the earth flipped as described in the Genesis Flood event. (Job 38:12-13 describes earth flip during the Flood. Also, Isaiah 24:18-20 uses flood terminology to describe the earth's gyration as a possibility in future terms.) This is when "all the fountains of the great deep were broken up" (Genesis 7:11) with the expulsion of both magma and several ocean volumes in the mantle of the earth.

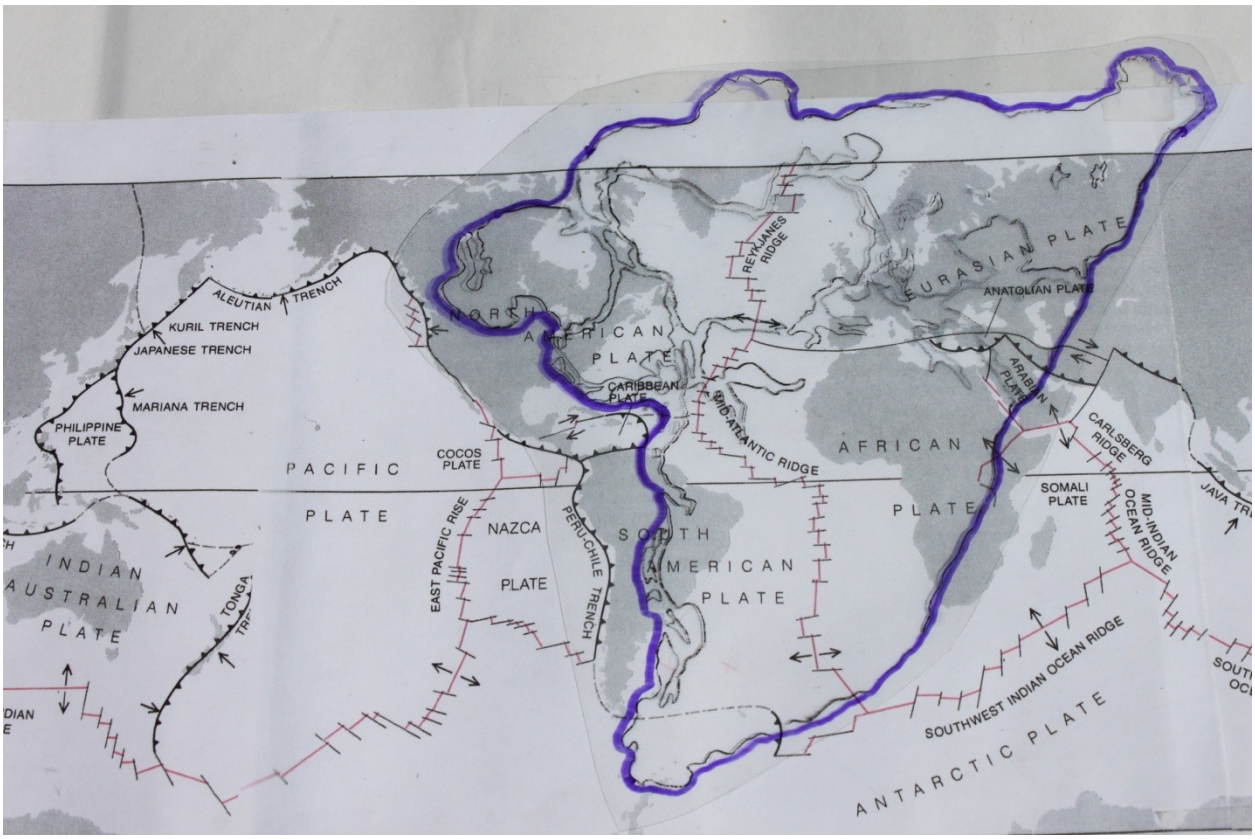
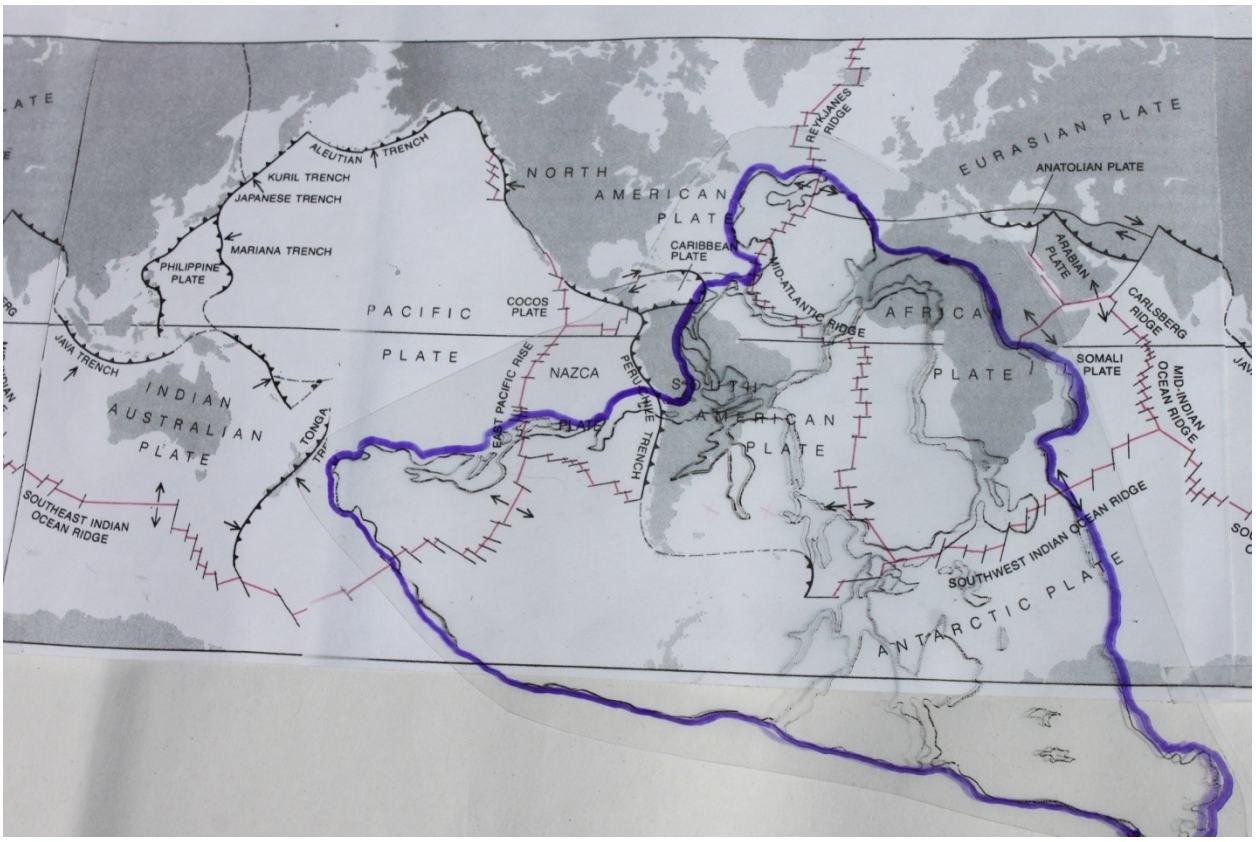


Fig. No. 12
PanNoah Path #2

The earth is shown to have flipped the first 180°, but PanNoah has not yet shown itself to have continued to have rotated 180° over the surface of the earth. PanNoah initial placement is shown over the Americas just before it was flung and slid across the South Pacific.



<u>Fig. No. 13</u>
PanNoah Path #3

The earth is shown to have flipped the first 180° and PanNoah is shown to have begun to have been flung and rotated another 180° over the outer spherical surface over the newly formed magma ocean floor covering the mantle. PanNoah initial placement is shown over South America. The carving of its initial inner radial path over the South Pacific Ocean is shown to have started over Peru, South America, and forming the Nazca Ridge in the South Pacific.

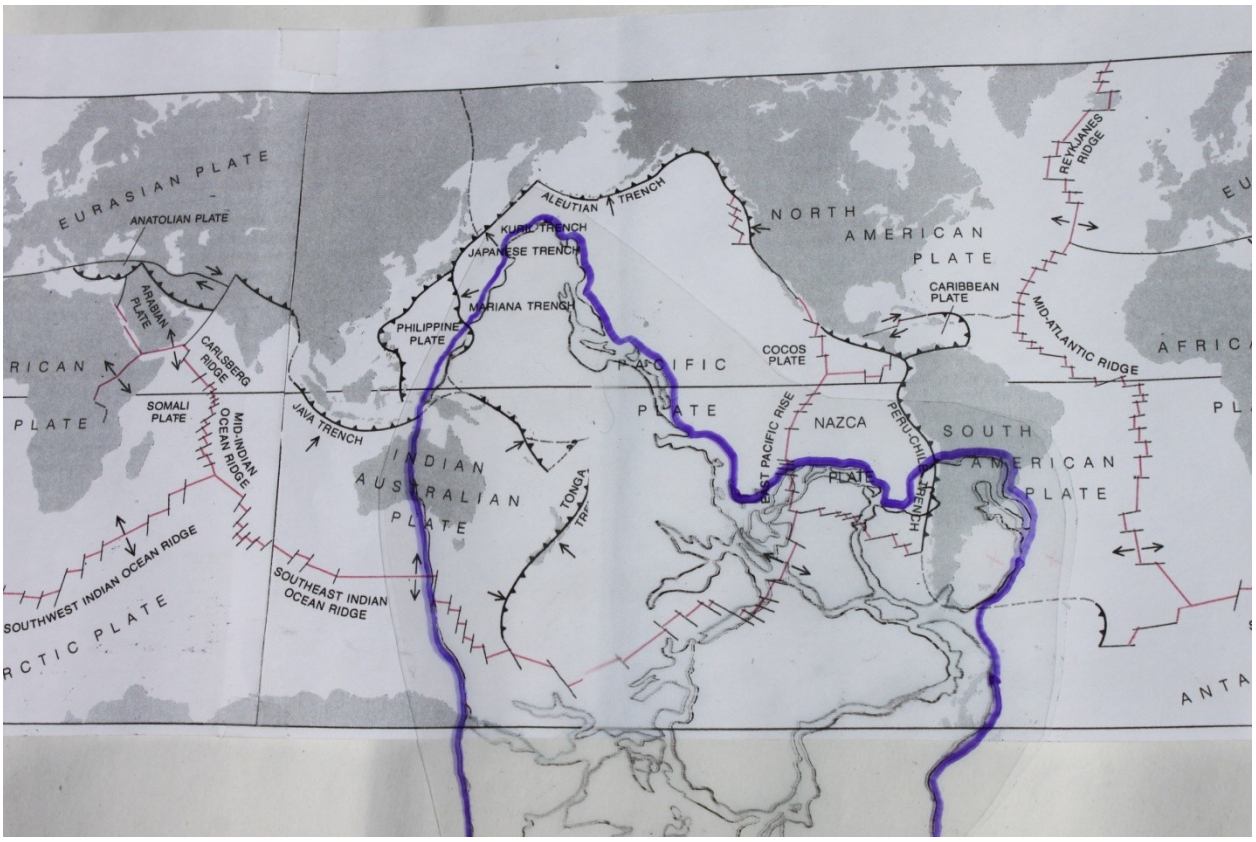
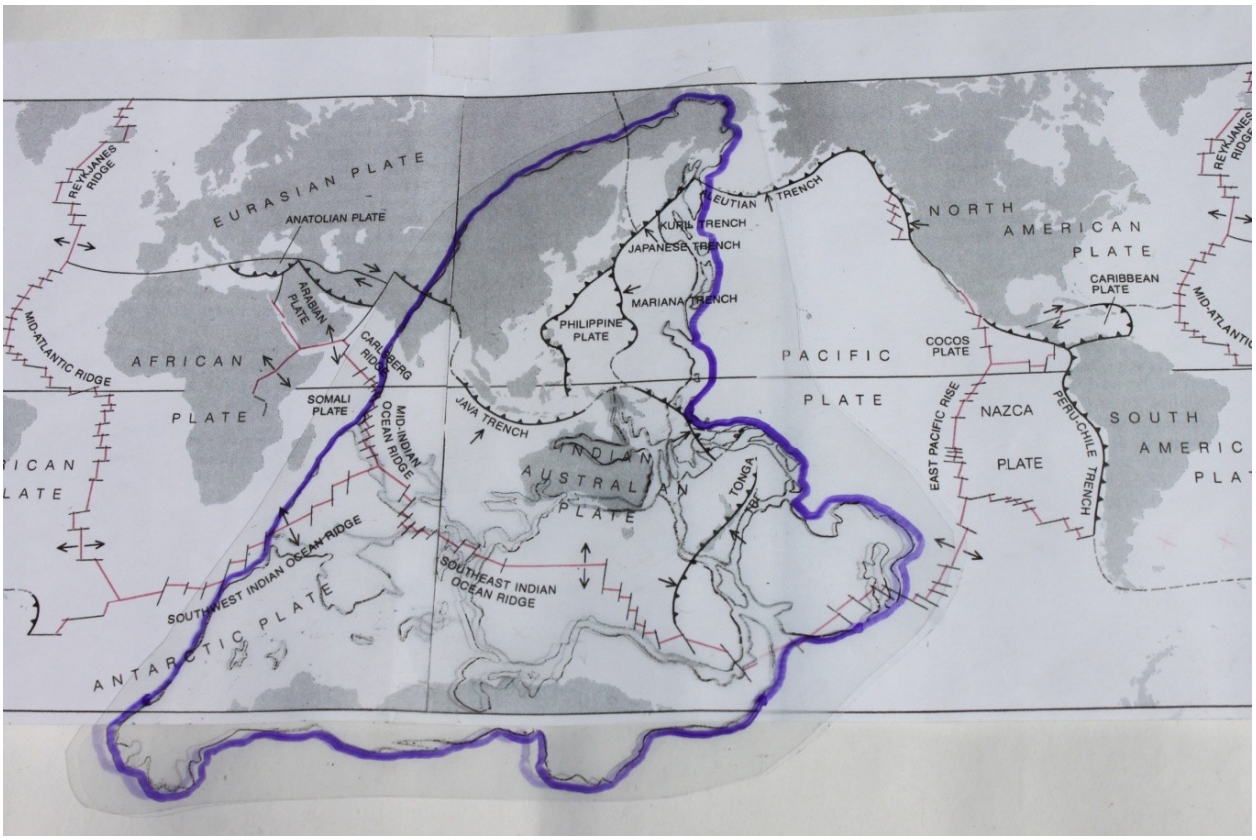


Fig. No. 14
PanNoah Path #4

As PanNoah continued to rotate clockwise, the carving of its initial inner radial path continued over the South Pacific to form the Tuamotu Archipelago Islands, Line Islands, Hawaiian Islands and the Emperor Seamount Islands.

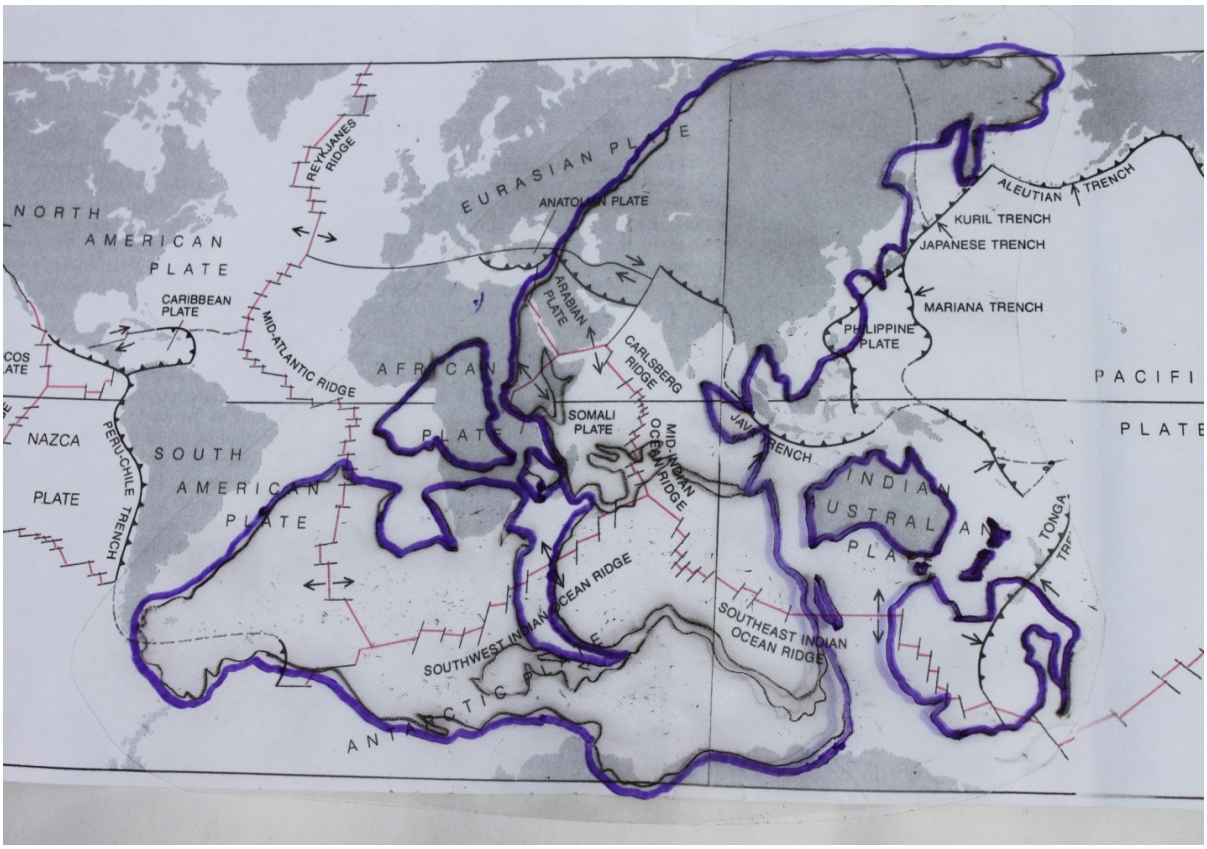


<u>Fig. No. 15</u>
PanNoah Path #5

As PanNoah continued to rotate clockwise, it carved its initial inner radial path over the South Pacific. It also began to slide approximately 20° off of the equator latitude. Notice how Australia and China fall along this proposed alignment. This 20° can eventually be seen all over the face of the earth in the formation of islands and mountain ranges.

<u>Fig. No. 16</u>
PanNoah Path #6

As PanNoah continued to rotate clockwise, it began to lose momentum and slow down.
The placement of China was over the Mariana Trench. This was the critical point where PanNoah 'jackknifed' and began to break-up into islands and continents. The Asian portion of PanNoah began to rotate clockwise slightly faster than its other continental portions. The future coastal edge of China formed the deepest point on the surface of the earth - the Mariana Trench. The proposed Australia is nearly over the existing Australia. At the same time, the thousands of feet of sediment over India tossed and cascaded northward to form the tallest mountain range in the world - the Himalayan Mountains.



<u>Fig. No. 17</u>
PanNoah Path #7

The Japan Island, Philippine Islands and the Indonesia Islands were formed to the east of the PanNoah as uni-continent kinked (see Celebes Island) and moved westward. Antarctica and Australia broke off northwestward with respect to of PanNoah. New Zealand Island broke to the east of Australia. The counter clockwise rotation, with respect to Australia, formed the multiple trenches to the northeast of the presently located Australia - i.e. Vityaz Trench and Kermadec Trench.

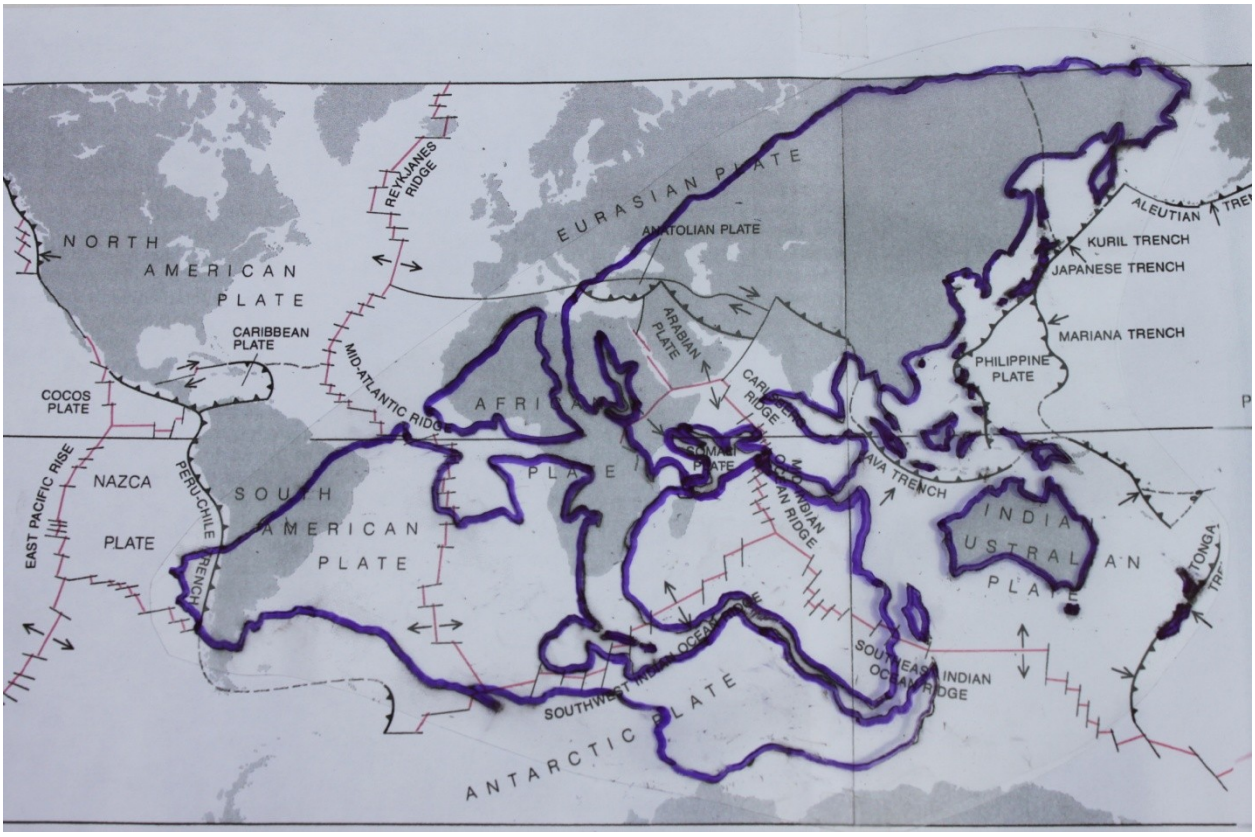


Fig. No. 18
PanNoah Path #8

As PanNoah continued to rotate clockwise; Greenland and North and South America broke apart from Africa and Europe. The Indian Ocean and the Atlantic Ocean began to form. The proposed India has split west from Indochina and was nearly in place.

<u>Fig. No. 19</u>
PanNoah Path #9

Africa moved northwestward in today's place, jamming into Europe. Europe, once in a north/south alignment, was flung to today's east/west alignment. Spain's Atlantic coast edge once keyed into the notch of Libya, Africa. This northwestward jamming into Europe formed the Mediterranean Sea, Black Sea, Alps and the Carpathian Mountain ranges. Greenland, North and South America, and Antarctica moved to their present locations.

<u>Fig. No. 20</u>
PanNoah Path #10

Greenland, North Central and South Americas, and Antarctica moved to their final locations. The south tip of South America and Antarctica together moved away from the south tip of Africa forming the Drakes Passage. All continents are now in their final locations. All the continental movement took place within hours or several days after the earth's mantle began to slide out from under PanNoah. The mid-oceanic ridge in the ocean floors bulged between splitting continents. The direction of the shear, transverse fractures and offsets of the mid-oceanic ridge and the hairpin curl of trench/islands surrounding Drakes Passage determines the direction that the continents broke away from PanNoah.

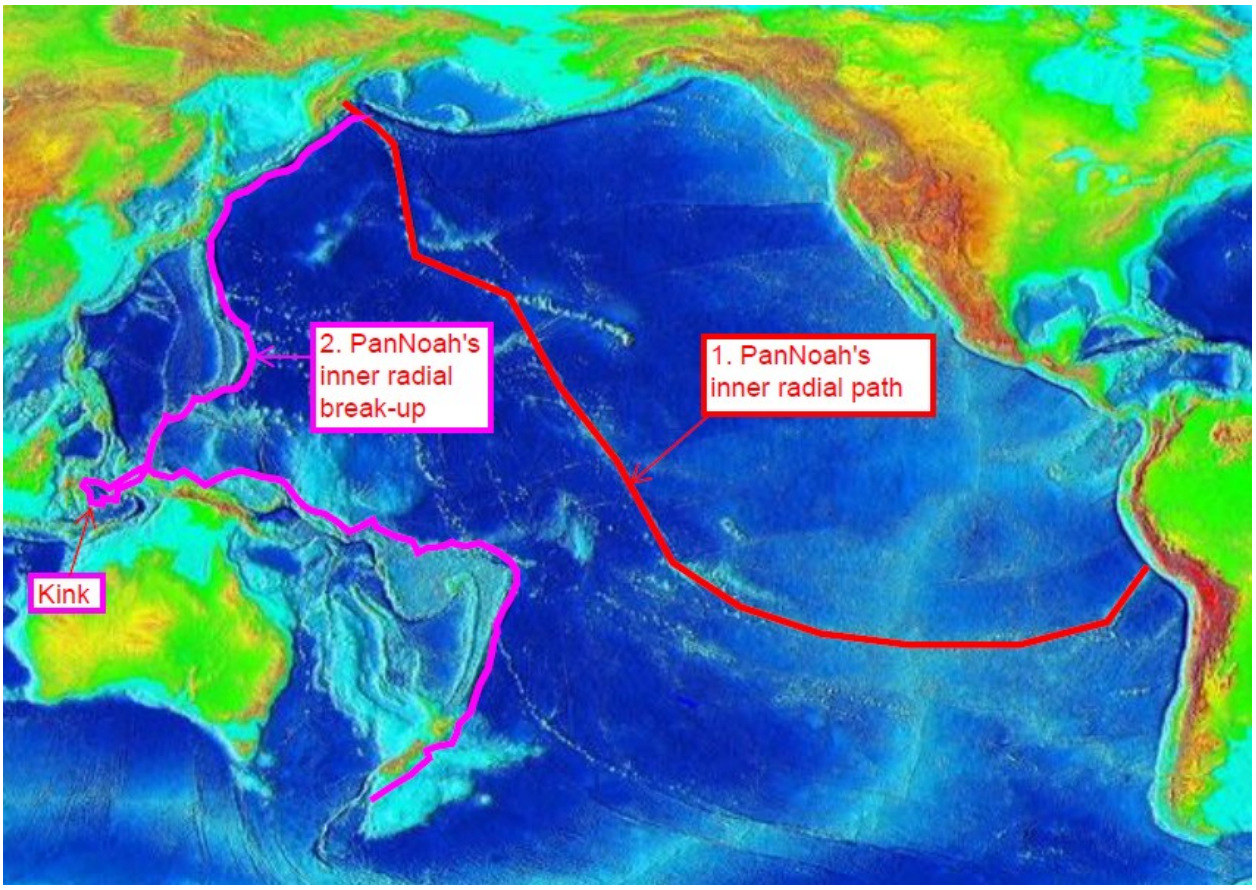


Fig. No. 21
PanNoah Clockwise Rotation

PanNoah rotated clockwise that formed an inner radial path (shown in Red) that can easily be seen on the floor of the Pacific Ocean. The author has also referred to this line as the dividing line between the Fracture Zone and the Debris Zone – The Great Pacific Divide. As PanNoah continued to rotate clockwise, it began to 'jack-knife' and break apart starting at the Mariana Trench. The inner radial break-up boundary is shown above (shown in Purple). (see Fig. 17). This boundary lines up nearly perfectly with the **Andesite Line** described in the figures below**.**

1. PanNoah's inner radial path: see Fig. 12 through Fig. 16.
2. PanNoah's inner radial break-up: see Fig. 17 through Fig. 18.

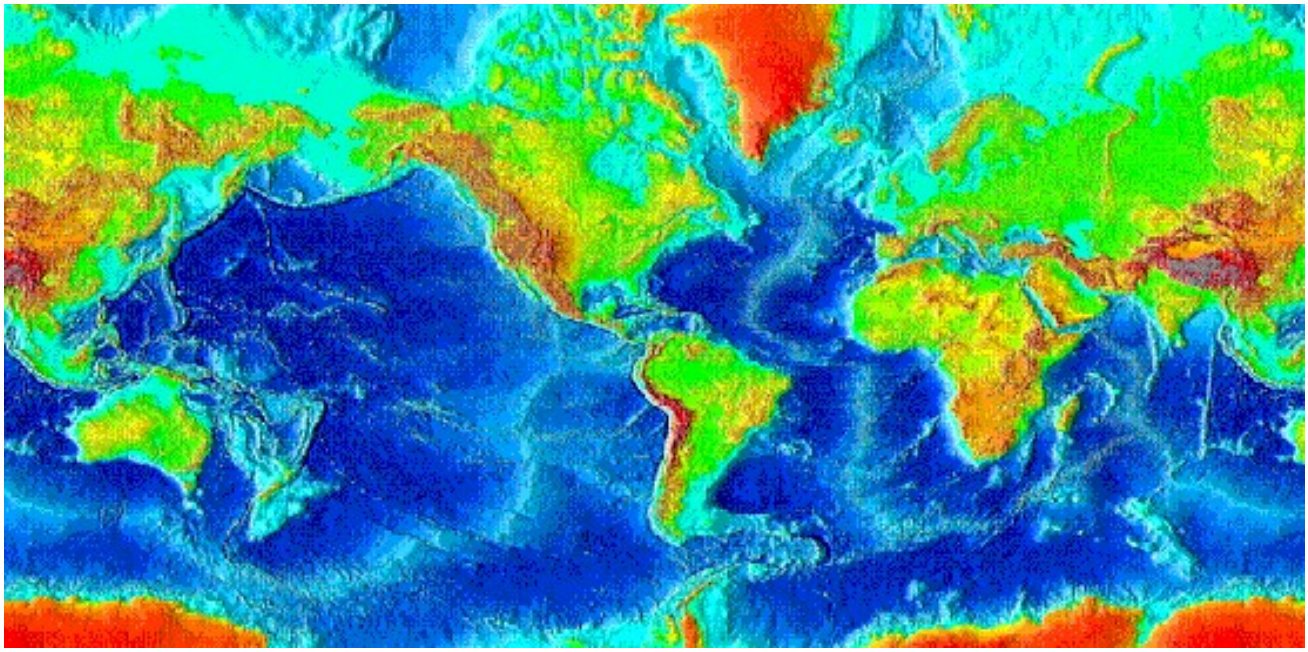


Fig. No. 22

Smithsonian Institute – Ocean Planet Exhibition

This map will be used only as reference to show where the current earth's relief features are today. Any copyright is not for the original work of this map, but only for the ideas and illustrations of Noah's Upheaval Flood Theory.

seawifs.gsfc.nasa.gov/OCEAN_PLANET/HTML/oceanography_geography

Ocean Planet Exhibition as it was presented at the Smithsonian Institution's National Museum of Natural History

Judith Gradwohl, Smithsonian Institution (Curator/Ocean Planet) [18]

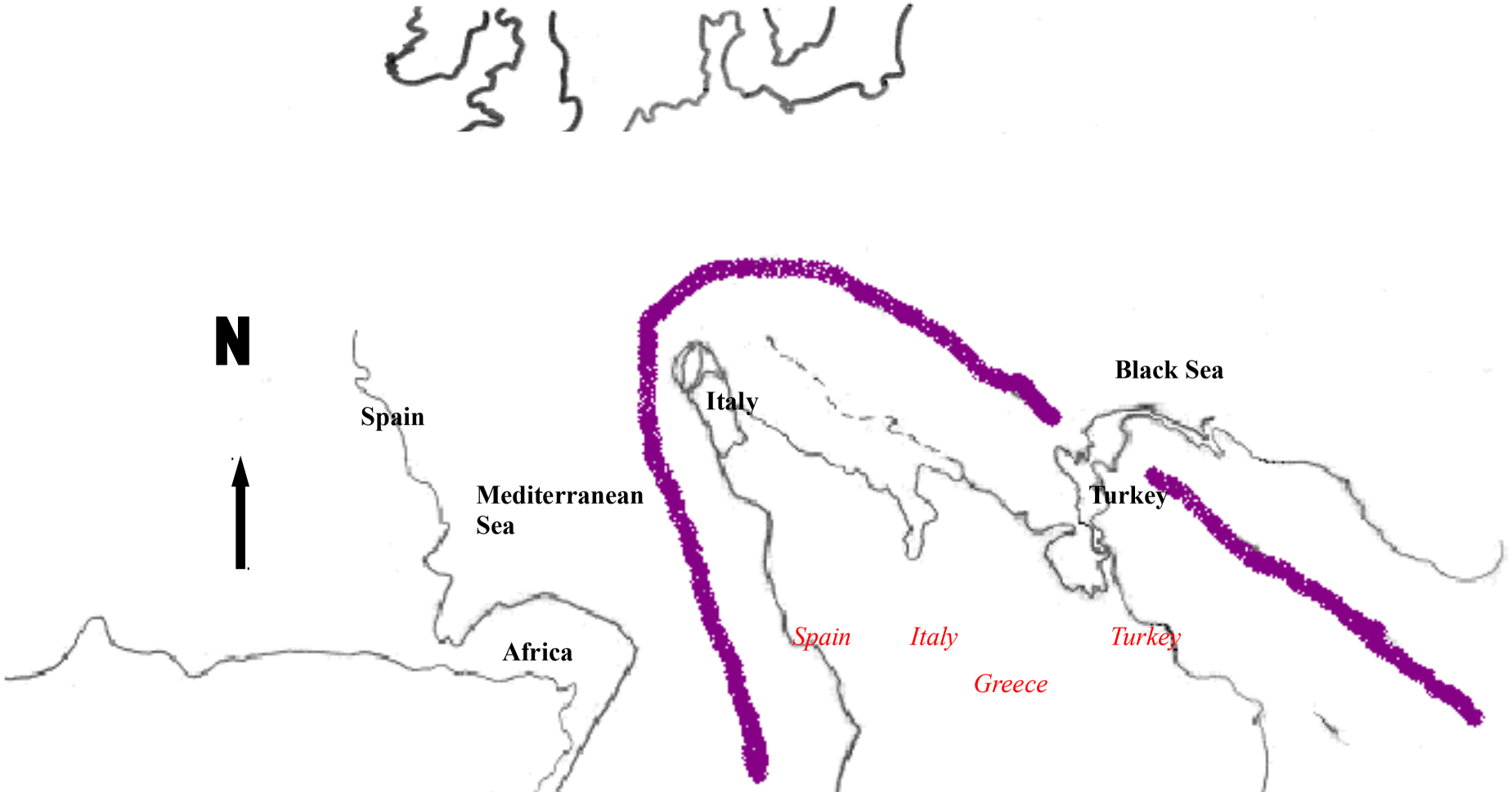


Fig. No. 23

Europe puzzle-pieced with Africa before breaking-up.

The above shows how *Spain, Italy, Greece and Turkey (red italicized letters)* was once together at the time of PanNoah as compared to today's orientation of Western Europe (bold letters). Spain was once in the notch of today's Libya, Africa. Spain was located where Yemen is located today. As Africa moved northwest, relative to India, the above countries were displaced to what we see today.

Fig. No. 24

Europe splits and arches up from Africa.

Africa has moved further northwest from where it was shown in Fig. No. 16-18 & 23. Turkey has been displaced where the Black Sea will soon be located. The Mediterranean Sea is now stretched more oblong in the direction that Africa was pushing and arching up the Alps / Carpathian Mts. in the northwest direction.

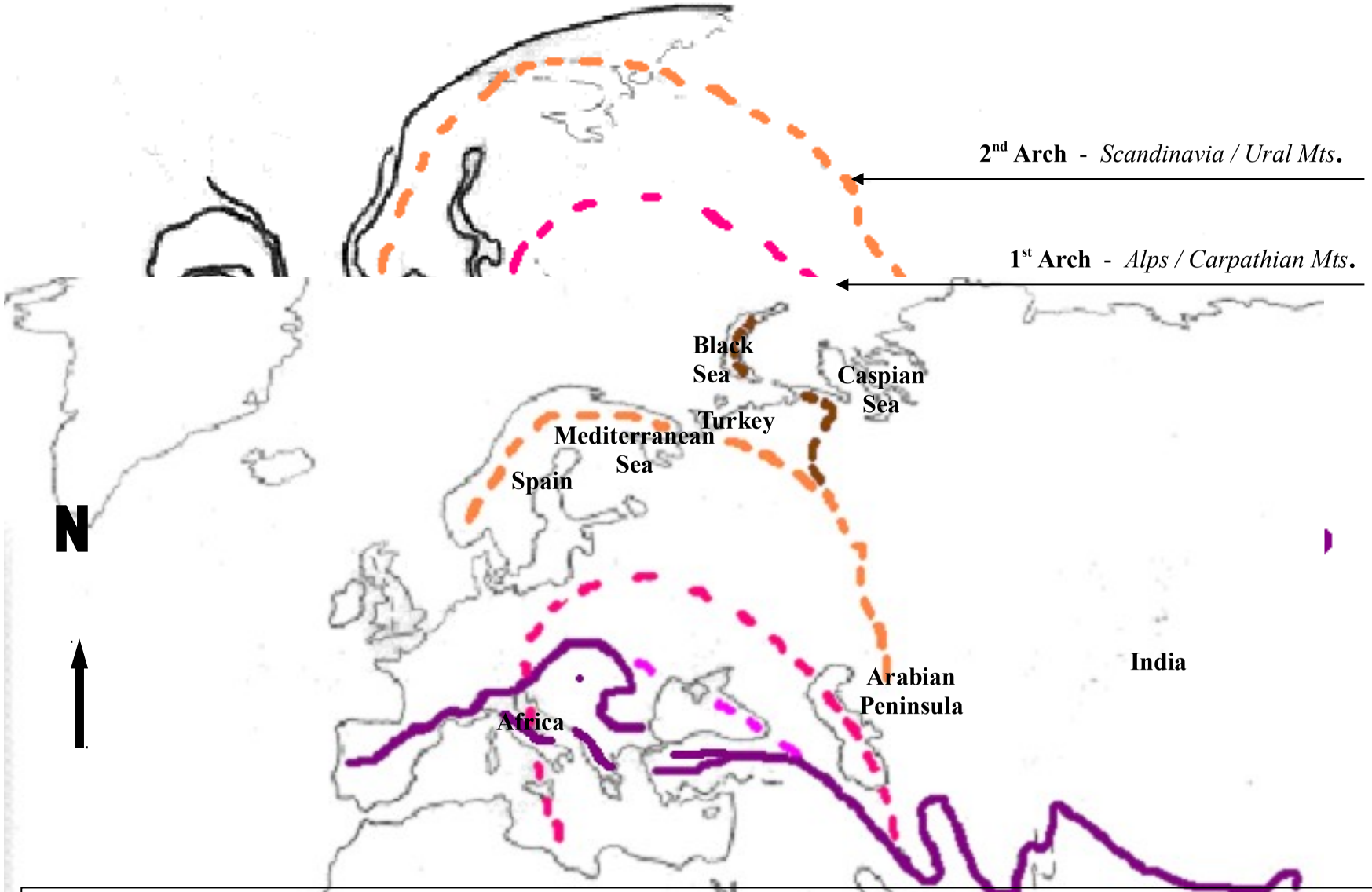


Fig. No. 25

Europe splits from Africa forming two major mountain range arches.

Fig. No. 26

Europe and Arch #1 mountains collapse toward Africa.

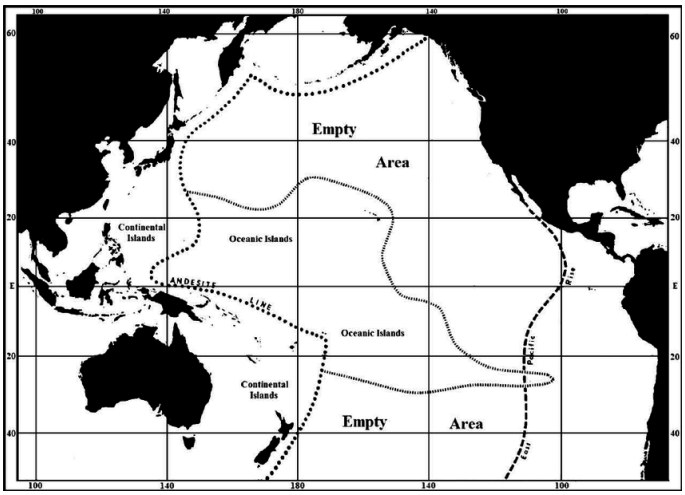
As Africa moved northwest, relative to India, the Afghanistan Curl and the 1st arch were formed. The 1st arch then formed the 2nd arch. Note that the right edge of the 1st arch was over the "to be Caspian Sea". Also note that Turkey was over the "to be Black Sea".

As the 1st arch (Alps/Carpathian Mts.) forms, so were the 2nd Arch (Scandinavia / Ural Mts.) formed. The 2nd mountain range also included the Mountains of the United Kingdom and the Novaya Zemlya Island.

Alps / Carpathian Mts. –

Splits after the 1st arch collapses.

The 1st arch collapsed and Turkey rotated counterclockwise, pulling down the right side of the arch, creating the Black Sea and the Caspian Sea. The arch buckled, and then split. Top half made up the Alps and the Carpathian Mountains. The bottom half are the mountains of Italy and Greece. The top half joined the bottom half at the Alps Mountains on the west side. The east side, which at one time joined at Turkey, is now offset. When the 1st arch collapsed, Norway and Sweden pulled toward Greenland and the south part of Western Europe collapsed to the south creating the Baltic Sea. Norway and Sweden rotated slightly counterclockwise, rotating the 2nd arch counterclockwise, twisting the Novaya Zemlya Island and part of the Ural



- See below Footnotes [1] & [2]

Fig. No. 27

Andesite Line – The Break-up Boundary of PanNoah

The **andesite line** is the most significant regional geologic distinction in the Pacific Ocean basin. It separates the mafic basaltic volcanic rocks of the Central Pacific Basin from the partially submerged continental areas of more felsic andesitic volcanic rock on its margins. The andesite line parallels the subduction zones and deep oceanic trenches around the Pacific basin. It is the surface expression of melting within and above the (supposed) plunging subducting slab. It follows the western edge of the islands off California and passes south of the Aleutian arc, along the eastern edge of the Kamchatka Peninsula, the Kuril Islands, Japan, the Mariana Islands, the Solomon Islands, and New Zealand's North Island. The dissimilarity continues northeastward along the western edge of the Andes mountains of South America to Mexico, returning then to the islands off California. Indonesia, the Philippines, Japan, New Guinea, and New Zealand lie outside the andesite line.

Within the closed loop of the andesite line are most of the deep troughs, submerged volcanic mountains, and oceanic volcanic islands that characterize the Pacific basin. It is here that basaltic lavas gently flow out of rifts to build huge dome-shaped volcanic mountains whose eroded summits form island arcs, chains, and clusters. Outside the andesite line, volcanism is of the explosive type. The Pacific Ring of Fire runs parallel to the line and is the world's foremost belt of explosive volcanism.[2]

[1] https://www.bing.com/images/search?view=detailV2&ccid=VdYOMt%2bx&id=8C68D8FEB85B22C0C590DD20D50CAA50EAEEB75A&thid=OIP.VdYOMt-xUTw15iGrXaBmLAHaFT&mediaurl=https%3a%2f%2fwww.researchgate.net%2fprofile%2fBen_Shaw5%2fpublication%2f222242546%2ffigure%2ffig3%2fAS%3a305117891973135%401449757182718%2fMap-of-the-Pacific-Ocean-showing-the-Andesite-Line-and-the-distribution-of-

See below Footnote [1]

Fig. No. 28

Andesite Line - Continental / Oceanic Crust Boundary

Note that the dividing line between the continental crust is the same delineated line as the **andesite line**. It is also the same delineated line of the PanNoah break-up. It gives reason as to why rock type to the west of this line is a mix of continental rock and oceanic rock called andesite rock. The greater the silica in the rock the more continental rock type it is thought to be. Also, the greater the silica content, the more explosive the volcanoes. The NU Flood Theory gives a strong reason for the andesite line and why there are different volcano types.

---

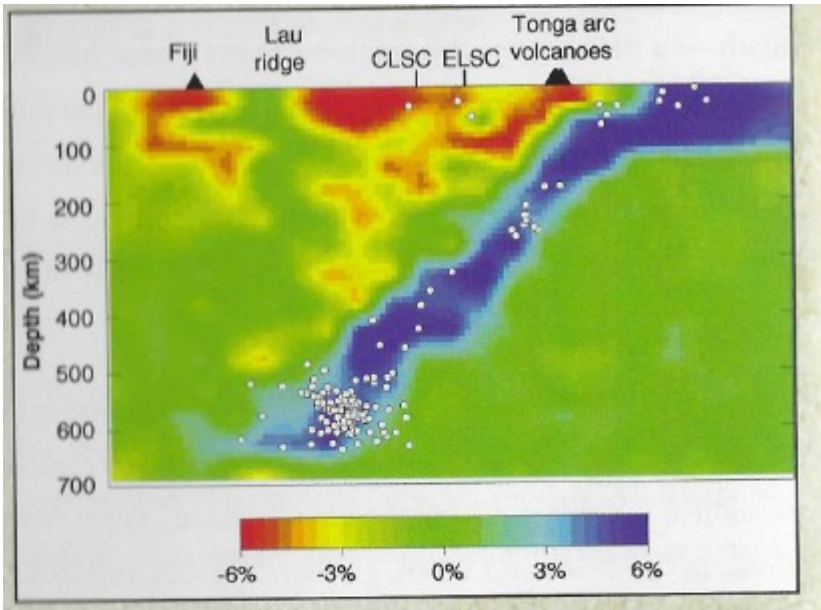
continental.png&exph=609&expw=850&q=andesite+line+of+pacific+ocean&simid=607998254765639179&ck=0BB360E2469598B255C132B40BD1F715&selectedindex=0&form=IRPRST&ajaxhist=0&first=1&scenario=ImageBasicHover

NOT Approved!

[2] Geology of The Pacific Ocean - Andesite Line
http://www.liquisearch.com/geology_of_the_pacific_ocean/andesite_line

[1] https://upload.wikimedia.org/wikipedia/commons/8/8a/Pacific_Basin_Island_Geography_Hotspots.jpg

NOT Approved!



P-wave tomography under the Tonga Trench, Pacific Ocean. The blue shows the colder ocean lithosphere descending into the mantle to a depth of nearly 700 km (435 miles). The white dots represent earthquake foci.

- See the below Footnote [1]

Fig. No. 29

Ocean Trench & Wadati-Benioff Zone

Diagram showing the ocean trench, abyss and "focal impact".

III. PanNoah's Breakup!

Before the earth flipped, PanNoah was most likely over today's North and South America and the Atlantic Ocean (Fig. 11 & 12). Antarctica was positioned at today's North Pole, while

[1] Timothy Clarey, *CARVED IN STONE, Geological Evidence of the Worldwide Flood,* (first printing March 2020), Institute for Creation Research, P.O. Box 59029, Dallas, TX 75229, ISBN 978-1-946246-25-7, pg. 140. **(Copyright Not Approved!)**

Asia was located south of the Equator over today's South America and South Atlantic Ocean. China's ocean coast then faced the west coast of today's South Pacific Ocean.

The earth flipped, perhaps multiple times, eventually to lock into today's axis of the Poles [1]. PanNoah immediately broke loose and began sliding clockwise over the South Pacific with China in the lead. The rotation of PanNoah would be similar to a picture frame hung by a nail on a string which is released at the 3:00 o'clock position and rapidly rotated to the 9:00 o'clock position (Fig. 12-16). In effect, PanNoah rotated a minimum of 360° -- 180° minimum with the flip of the earth before any sliding and another 180° of rotation with the sliding of PanNoah over the South Pacific Ocean. The 'supercontinent' rotated clockwise and circled northwestward in its final movement so that the northeast corner of PanNoah became a new pivot point about the Kamchatka Peninsula, in northeast Asia (Fig. 16).

The mantle easily slid out from under PanNoah. PanNoah slid over the face of the earth as a cookie sheet might easily hydroplane over a wet kitchen counter. Its sliding surface was the boundary between the earth's crust and the mantle – today known as the Mohorovicic discontinuity, or the Moho. PanNoah's slide path can easily be seen in the South and West Pacific Ocean. (Fig. 21, line #1).

The Fracture Zone in the northwest Pacific Ocean floor was the first to be formed as the PanNoah rotated clockwise and pulled away. Since the newly laid lava ocean floor stretched beyond its plastic limit, it sheared in a parallel, circular pattern in the northeast of the Pacific Ocean in the direction that PanNoah pulled away. These fractures visualized by multiple Popsicle sticks placed adjacent and squared to each other, and then skewed, show the sheared fractured gap between the Popsicle sticks. The residual path of the inner radii boundary of the

[1] Idea by Ruth E. Smith

‘supercontinent’ is visible in the circular path just south and west of the fracture zones. Trenches and parallel islands in the South Pacific Ocean floor formed to the south and west of the Fracture Zone, which the author has called the “Debris Zone”. The line that differentiates between these two zones has been named by this auther as the “Great Pacific Divide” (Fig. 21, #1 Red Line). This clockwise line of demarcation in the Pacific Ocean, starting at the west coast of South America named from east to west in the direction that PanNoah slid, can be viewed as the Mazca Ridge, Sala Y Gomez Ridge, Tuamotu Ridge, Christmas Ridge, Hawaiian Ridge and Emperor Seamounts. This line defines the inner radial boundary of the path of PanNoah resulting in these island and seamount features. Other near parallel-clockwise lines to the south and west of this line can also be seen in the floor of the South Pacific Ocean and the western half of the Pacific Ocean.

The break-up of PanNoah resulted as the north portion, Asia and Europe, traveled more clockwise in a smaller radius than the southern portion: Africa, Arabian Peninsula, North and South America, Antarctica and Australia. As PanNoah approached its final destination, it ‘jack-knifed’, which was the beginning of its disintegration (Fig. 16 & 17) into today’s continents. The collision and break-up of PanNoah can be viewed in a similar way as a train wreck with the train cars zigzagging, crashing and tearing apart. When the west Pacific Ocean lava floor jammed into the China portion at a 20° northwest angle with respect to the equator, it formed the Mariana Trench - the point of ‘jack-knife’ (Fig. 21, #2 Purple Line). An inner, compression ring of continental mountains immediately formed from Antarctica to Australia/New Zealand to the northeast tip of East Asia of PanNoah as the inner edges collapsed and densified, causing an immediate breakup to form the islands to the east of Asia, leaving islands like Japan and the

Philippine Islands behind. [1] Before the jamming and breakup of the 'supercontinent', Africa and the Arabian Peninsula were connected to the southwest quadrant below the south tip of India. When the jack-knife occurred, a counterclockwise rotation of the southern portion of the 'super continent' occurred with respect to the northern portion, although all portions still rotated clockwise. The result was the disintegration of PanNoah from east to west along a 20° northwest angle with respect to the equator. As PanNoah began to break-up and slow down as the under-belly friction began to increase, the super-continent left behind a residue of continental rock debris on the Western Pacific Ocean floor, different from the basaltic ocean floor on the Eastern Pacific Ocean floor. This line is considered a boundary between the continental crust and ocean crust is called the 'andesite line' (Fig. 27 & 28).

The global disintegration of PanNoah resulted in continents being flung around the globe, leaving multiple islands behind to the mother continent's east side (Fig. 17). Where the PanNoah jammed, the compression of the inner mountain ridge ring formed on its eastern coasts of East Asia, Australia and Antarctica. This inner ring tore away to the east from the 'super continent' where it became dense and mountainous islands. The speed was such that it kinked at approximately Borneo and Celebes Islands, at the Banda Sea northwest of Australia (Fig. 21, #2 Purple Line). Massive continental land mass was lost to the Pacific Ocean and seas from eastern edges of PanNoah during this initial breakup. These seas include South China Sea, Philippine Sea, Celebes Sea, Coral Sea, and Tasman Sea.

The speed at which PanNoah broke up is emphasized by the 180° rotation of New Guinea forming the circular counterclockwise islands around the Banda Sea, just east of Borneo. This

[1] *Shaping the Earth, Tectonics of Continents and Oceans,* Readings from Scientific American, *Terranes,* David G. Howell, November 1985, pp. 110.

- "The northwestern quadrant of the Pacific includes Asia, Japan and Philippines. Here the continental crust consists of **old continental fragments**, …." (bold added for emphasis)

pattern is again repeated with a circular 180° rotation counterclockwise rotation of islands of New Britain and New Ireland as if they were at the end of a snapped whip. Similar evidence can also be seen further east in the contours of the sea floor. Other islands that were left behind in the wake of their mother continents to the east are as follows: Japan from Asia, Philippines from Indochina, and New Zealand from Australia.

The evidence is most telling in the trenches, escarpments, ridges and fractures in the ocean floor. The trenches and ridges that surround New Zealand to its northwest give very supportive evidence of its abrupt break-up from Australia, while showing the inner circular path of PanNoah. The total evidence shows that the 'super continent' rotated as if it were a speeding racecar that suddenly hit its brakes, spinning it 180° out-of-control. The net result is that the 'super continent' jack-knifed causing continents to break away and leaving behind islands and trenches in its wake to its east.

As PanNoah skipped across the new lava ocean floor, it left waves of debris of underwater mountain ranges, lines of truncated island, or mountain ranges with peaks that have reached above the sea level forming islands. Often accompanying these ocean mountain ranges were their ocean trenches that followed. It was also possible that these features were the result of a newly molten ocean floor that flung itself onto a slowing PanNoah, impressing itself onto PanNoah's inner border leaving its imprint behind. The newly molten ocean floor that the continental crust slid over also rotated clockwise, slamming into continental borders. These initial patterns can be seen between the Mariana Trench and China, New Zealand and Australia and multiple other locations all over the world. Sediment mounds rapidly mounted in the direction of its movement over both ocean and PanNoah as it hydroplaned over the South Pacific and West Pacific Ocean. Sedimentation occurred when the Floodwaters sheetflowed as tsunamis

over the continental edges, covering and eroding the entire surface of PanNoah creating sand and gravel out of solid rock. Its sedimentary debris was strewn over every continent and oceans of the world. Much of this debris was somewhat contained by the ocean lava that shifted landward from the momentum of a flipped earth. Also, as a result of the enormous weight of the continental mass over the melting mantle, tremendous pressure was brought onto the magma to extrude between the developing land cracks. Hundreds of thousands or tons of magma rose abruptly as plumes erupted from under the continent onto its surface to form today's massive lava 'traps' covering thousands of square miles on multiple continents.

> A Swiss geologist and mountaineer, H. B. de Saussure, a contemporary of Hutton's, noticed that the sedimentary rock strata of the Alps appeared to be crumpled into *folds, like a rug shoved along a slippery floor*.[1] (emphasis added)

When the northern portion of PanNoah began to rotate more clockwise than the southern portion, the southern portion -- South America, Africa, the Arabian Peninsula, Antarctica and Australia -- kinked at Celebes Islands and rotated counterclockwise (relative to India) slamming into India and Indochina. This sudden jolt of Asia coming to a stop caused cascading waves of the top surface of earth's strata (including the newly laid horizontal sediment) to mount high in the northern direction forming the Himalayan Mountains, the tallest mountain range in the world (Fig. 17).[2] Today sea shale fossils are found on top of these mountains. During the 'jack-

[1] Lou Williams Page, Ideas from Geology, An Addison-Wesley Shortext (Philippines: Addison-Wesley Publishing Company, Inc., 1973), pp. 50.

[2] *Shaping the Earth, Tectonics of Continents and Oceans,* Readings from Scientific American, *Terranes,* David G. Howell, November 1985, pp. 107.

- "In the world today the **greatest single source of sediment** is the towering landform resulting from the collision of India and Asia. There the Asian crust has overridden the Indian terrane, doubling the thickness of the crust and creating the Himalayan Mountains, and their north the Tibetan plateau." (bold added for emphasis)

knifing' event, at the same time that the deepest part of the earth, the Mariana Trench, was formed, the Himalayan Mountains were also formed. The jamming and folding of the newly laid sediment formed, as described by Swiss geologist H. B. de Saussure, the Himalayan Mountains (as were many other mountain ranges) like a throw rug might fold over a slippery floor. The trillions of tons of tsunami wet sediment from the pre-Flood ocean basin that was initially strewn over all of PanNoah became known as the Cambrian Period in the Geological Column. Later multiple sedimentary horizontal layers, or strata, stacked over the Cambrian layer in a pancake manner, in some cases, several miles in depth forming megasequence layers. The complete unit of strata was then thrust northward, as the 'supercontinent' tore apart and came to an abrupt stop. Only the very upper surface strata were thrust much further north cascading over itself by nearly a hundred miles, relative to the unit sediment, to form today's mountains. Other interior continental mountains, with respect to PanNoah, would have also been formed in the same manner.

Where there is an action, there also is a reaction. The southern portion of Australia broke from Antarctica and South America tore from Africa at its southern end. The African Rift formed and tore Madagascar away from Africa's east side. It is no accident that African Rift and the Australian west coast are similar profile, since Australia broke away from the east coast of Africa. The rotation of North and South America formed the circular northwest edge of Africa (Fig. 17).

The initial jamming and the movement of East Pacific Asia to the north left Australia and the Indonesian Islands behind to the south. India separated west from the Indochina Peninsula, forming the Ninetyeast Ridge located in the now Indian Ocean. Africa and the Arabian Peninsula, originally below India, separated from India to form the Chagos-Laccadive Ridge in

the now Arabian Sea. Africa and the Arabian Peninsula slammed northwestward along India's western border. As Australia, Africa and Antarctica were flung in separate directions, the Indian Ocean basin was formed (Fig. 17). The clockwise tension breaks resulted in 'V' patterns at the southern ends of Africa and India.

As Africa plowed clockwise and northwestward, so was Europe pushed upward. The Gulf of Aden and the Red Sea were formed. Initially Europe had been orientated north and south, with Spain connected to Africa at Libya (Fig. 23) . As Europe arched up, separating from Africa, the Mediterranean Sea basin was formed (Fig. 18). The Alps and the Carpathian Mountains were also formed and arched without initially any curls (Fig. 24 & 25). But as Africa continued to push northwestward, Spain's portion of Europe became shortened to the point that it broke from Libya, causing Western Europe to breakout northwestward (Fig. 19). This left a key-notch above Libya where Spain had initially been attached. The upward movement of Africa and the Arabian Peninsula resulted in the tear of the Red Sea with nearly the same northwest orientation as the western coast of India.

The border of Spain that once was attached to Libya now borders the west coast of the Atlantic Coast (Fig. 19 & 24 to 26). As the west leg of the first arch shortened as Africa moved northward, this forced Spain to detach at the west end of its foundation, leaving only the eastern foundation attached at Iran. Without the attachment of western leg of the arches, Europe collapses toward a northward moving Africa. This shortening resulted in the eastern portion of the arch, which are the Alps and the Carpathian Mountains, to curl and shift south. As Turkey shifted south, the Black Sea and the Caspian Sea were formed at the same time as the Carpathian Mountains were curled near Romania, Europe. The islands between Greece and Turkey were formed as the two splits apart to the south. This is why the northwest orientation of the

peninsulas of Italy and Greece are similar to the orientation of the Red Sea and the Persian Gulf which are similar to the northwestern border of India from which Africa and the Arabian Peninsula slid northwestward. The Scandinavian Peninsula and the Baltic Sea also formed as the peninsula broke westward. A second arch of mountain ranges formed spanning from England, Scandinavian Mountains, Novaya Zemlya Island (ripped peak), to the Ural Mountains. The second arch may have extended as far as the Appalachian Mountains in North America (Fig. 25 & 26).

Greenland, North America, and South America broke from Europe and Africa (Fig. 20). As North America broke away from Europe, it left Greenland between the two continents torn and left behind with a 'V' pattern on its southern tip. North America broke away from Europe and Africa at a 20-degree angle from the latitude. South America also flung from Africa at a 20-degree northwest angle from its original position when Africa was initially located below India.

The Great Lakes of the United States and Canada formed a near perfect semi-circle as they tore away from Greenland (Fig. 20). All the Canadian islands above the Arctic Circle and between Greenland and Canada resulted from the continental tear. The Appalachian Mountains along the United States' east coast and the Mauritanides Mountains along Africa's northwest coast are a mirror image of each other due to the train wreck collision of the two continents. The Western Cordillera Mountains, including the Rocky Mountains and Andes Mountains on the western borders of North America and South America arose as PanNoah rotated clockwise over the ocean floor, scraping up ocean floor debris and shortening its border edges and forming terranes in western North America on its outside radial edge. Central America was formed as North and South America stretched apart after it tore from Africa, leaving the West Indies Islands to its east. Islands and continents, PanNoah's broken pieces, arrive at their final destination as we know them today (Fig. 20 & 22).

IV. The Ocean Formation

As the continents broke away, oceans were formed in between the spreading landmasses. The centripetal force swelled the ductile, near molten, mantle between the spreading continents. As the continents spread further apart, the higher the swelling became between the continents to become known as the mid-oceanic ridge. The further the continents spread apart, the more torsion was placed on the newly molten ocean floor that covered the mantle. Near parallel transverse fractures sheared perpendicular across the mid-oceanic ridge from continent to continent. These fractures and offset may be visualized in a similar manner as the Popsicle sticks placed side by side on their flat side sliding past each other. Few of these transverse fractures ever cross each other; many are less than 50 miles apart with spans well over 3000 miles from continent to continent (1:60 ratio). For all these parallel fractures to have occurred with such precision, the entire ocean floor must have been plastic (lava) at one time. The ocean crust could not have been mafic rock and fractured in nearly perfectly parallel transverse fractures over millions of years as described by the Plate Tectonic Theory. This phenomenon parallel fractures not crossing themselves is indicative of one single catastrophic event – the Genesis Flood!

The following wax experiment helps makes the case for how a thin molten ocean crust mechanically might have formed the shear block fractures. Eberhard Bodenschatz, Cornell University physicist, with his team of assistances, developed a model of tub of wax that was stretched to demonstrate ocean floor spreading showed how fractures might have occurred.

> His experiments, which build on research going back to the 1970s, examine phenomena similar to ocean floor spreading. His experimental apparatus, 3 feet long, 1 foot wide and 4 inches deep, is filled with molten wax. Cold air is blown over the wax surface so that a solid layer is formed.

> The solid wax layer represents the Earth's cold and hard lithosphere, and the molten wax below, the Earth's plastic upper mantle. The solid layer of wax is divided, and the two halves are pulled apart with constant velocity. "This enables us to study the dynamical structure of the rift while wax constantly solidifies at the plate margins," Bodenschatz said. [1]

In a similar way as the wax experiment, just as the wax fractured as it was stretched in a very short time, so was the lava ocean crust stretched as the earth flipped and expanded. Both materials, whether a wax sheet or an ocean floor, would have very similar pliability and form similar shear block patterns when stretched beyond their plastic limit. The lava ocean floor crust must have covered the entire surface of the earth, including under PanNoah, at one time. Its upper surface may have cooled and became more hardened relative to its depth, due to the chilling waters from the "fountains of the deep" that occurred simultaneously. Like the experiment with the molten wax sheet, as the earth flipped, the continents and ocean floor spread and sheared resulting in transverse and parallel fractures.

The article goes on to say that a few minutes with the model were equivalent to millions of years. [2] But, would it not be more reasonable to assume that if the experiment took only a short time that the actual event that was modeled after may have also been a very short time as well – perhaps days if not hours?

---

[1] *http://www.news.cornell.edu/releases/March99/APS.Eberhard.wax.deb.html*

David Brand*, Modeling ocean floor spreading in a tub of wax, Cornell researcher sees eons pass in minutes,* deb27@cornell.edu

[2] *http://www.news.cornell.edu/releases/March99/APS.Eberhard.wax.deb.html*

David Brand*, Modeling ocean floor spreading in a tub of wax, Cornell researcher sees eons pass in minutes,* deb27@cornell.edu

V. The Flood

The Flood was one event, but occurred in five different phases as a direct result of the flipping of the earth. The result was that the Floodwaters encroached, and eventually covered, all the earth's landmass. The rise of the Floodwaters should not be thought of as water simply rising as water rises in a bathtub. Instead, it should be thought of as multiple phases with the initial two phases having a massive tsunami sheetflow of water and tsunami mud sediment overflowing the edges of the continents.

Immanuel Velikovsky presented evidence where a mega-flood, not glaciers, occurred in the Great Russian plains that came from the north. He noted the disagreement of two prominent geologist, of the 1800's during the time of Charles Darwin and Charles Lyell. Louis Agassiz Louis had done landmark work on glacier activities and its transformation of the earth's landscape. Sir Roderick Impey Murchison research of the Russian plains disagreed with Louis Agassiz glacier theory.

> For many months Murchison crossed the latitudes and longitudes of Russia, carefully observing the erratic boulders strewn over the Great Russian plains and rechecking the validity of Agassiz's theory. In Finland and the northern Russian provinces, he found very large blocks, but they diminished in size the farther south one went, which pointed to the ***action of water, a tide that came down from the north or northwest***, spreading rock fragments along its way. He also observed that erratic boulders in the Carpathian Mountains were not of local but of Scandinavian origin. [1] (emphasis added)

He continues by stating:

[1] Velikovsky, Immanuel. *Earth in Upheaval* (New York, NY: Pocket Books, 1977), ISBN 0-671-83454-1, pp. 34-35.

> Seeing that there are no mountains whatever from which a glacier can ever have been propelled in southern Sweden, Finland, or north-eastern Russia, and yet that these regions are powerfully abraded, scored and polished," Murchison came to the conclusion that effects so extensively developed over such flat countries must have ***resulted from an irrupting sea*** that also left behind enormous masses of debris and rolled stone.[1] (emphasis added)

Phases 1 through 3 all happened within hours to several days from the start of the Flood. This is based on following factors:

1. Genesis 7:11 says that on day one, ***all*** the "fountains of the deep" broke.
2. The breaking of the continents with accompanying islands must have been sudden.
3. The paths and fractures on the ocean floor demonstrate that it must have been sudden.
4. Mountain ranges all over the work demonstrate that their formation must have been sudden by their makeup, shape and location.

These factors will be further explained in general in the five phases of the Flood and in more detail throughout the document.

Flood - Phase 1

The first flood phase was when the earth initially flipped before PanNoah dislodged. The earth gyration resulted in the pre-Flood ocean being swept over PanNoah, but not necessarily from any particular direction. PanNoah was struck by a series of massive tsunamis, but most likely not as huge as the ones to follow in the Phase 2. The initial Floodwater tsunamis came from magma and floodwaters exploding from superplume volcanoes. The most likely source of the superplume volcanoes came from the separation of the upper mantle from the lower mantle

---

[1] *Earth in Upheaval*, pp. 35.
- R. I. Murchison, The Geology of Russia in Europe and the Ural Mountains, I (London, 1845), 553.

forming the ‘mantle transition zone’. The Bible, Genesis 7:11, will call this initial event the “fountains of the great deep.”

The ”fountains of the great deep” caused the initial uplifting and displacement of the pre-Flood ocean. The gyrating, fluctuating crust and mantle began a continual, pumping action as the magma and waters exploded to the surface. The floodwaters and ocean floor lava quickly accumulated the first several hours or days.

Flood - Phase 2

The second phase was when PanNoah land mass finally dislodged from the mantle. The mantle rotated out from under PanNoah in a clockwise direction. PanNoah began to float as the super-plumes magma flooded the total surface of the earth. The magma burst forth from the mantle like a hundred thousand blowtorches [1]. PanNoah floated and rotated over the South Pacific Ocean like an air-hockey puck glides over the air-injected playing board. (In reality, it was the mantle that rotated out from under PanNoah.) This was most likely when the greatest sheetflows occurred, when most of the sediment was being laid down in level stratum just before the continents broke apart. The sheet flow came from the north, a very specific direction, relative to today’s continents as demonstrated by Sir Roderick Impey Murchison regarding the erratic boulders strewed over the Russian plains from the erupting Arctic Ocean. As the gyrating mantle increased so did the pumping continue. This was when thousands of feet of marine sediment -- the original ocean floor -- swept over a very flat ‘supercontinent’, before today’s mountains were initially formed. These sediments swept over the continents from a northeast

[1] Answers, April-June 2014, Volume 9, No. 2, Dr. Andrew A Snelling, Ph.D, Noah’s Lost World, pg. 84.

Ref. 8 and A. Johansson, “From Rodinia to Gondwana with the ‘Samba’ Model—A Distant View from Baltica Towards Amazonia and Beyond,”Precambrian Research (2013), http://dx.doi.org/10.1016/j.precamres.2013.10.012.

direction to a southwest direction due to the clockwise rotation of PanNoah. If there were any pre-Flood mountains, they were literally swept, or planed, off the face of the earth within hours. These initial marine layers, displaced on land, later became known as the Cambrian layer. This phase occurred during the rotation of PanNoah, with the 'jack-knifing' of PanNoah and the breaking of the continents. Nearly three-fifths of all sedimentary rock above the 'basement rock', thousands of feet deep, was determined to have come from the north based on fossilized cross-bed, ripple waves imbedded within the strata. Since, the Geological Column is said to be a little over 500 million years old, then 300 million years of sediment must have flowed from the north with regards to the uniformitarian ages assigned to the Geological Column, not easily explained from a Plate Tectonic perspective. As PanNoah rotated clockwise over the South Pacific, the majority of the Floodwater and sediment would have enveloped the north rim of PanNoah -- today the top rim of Asia, Europe, Greenland and Canada.

> Furthermore, water current indicators (such as ripple marks) preserved in rock layers show that for "300 million years" water currents were consistently flowing from northeast to southwest across all of North and South America, which of course, is only possible over weeks during a global flood [1]

In Dr. John D. Morris's book, *The Global Flood, Unlocking Earth's Geologic History*, he makes the case that the Flood can be shown to have come from a particular direction at specific stages of the Flood, and that it came in the form of sheet flow and 'megasequences.'[2]

---

[1] Dr. Andrew A. Snelling, *The Global Flood, A biblical and scientific look at the catastrophe that changed the earth*, copyright 2009, Answers in Genesis - USA, P.O. Box 510, Hebron, KY 41048, ISBN: 1-60092-264-3, pp. 25.

[2] Dr. John D. Morris, *The Global Flood*, Unlocking Earth's Geologic History, copyright 2012, first printing, Creation Research, P.O. Box 59029, Dallas, TX 75229, ISBN: 978-1-935587-12-5, Library of Congress Catalog Number: 2012949341, pp. 152-154.

The direction of the current can be determined by cross-bed sedimentary depositions. Dr. Morris takes the perspective that the Floodwaters sheetflowed 'to and fro'. In the NU Theory perspective, the Floodwaters initially came from the northeast, then from the northwest, to finally flow in an east/west orientation during the middle stages as the mid-oceanic ridge rose, from the south as the continents came to a stop but the Floodwaters continued to flow clockwise, and finally to no discernible direction in the last stages.

In other words, the Flood appears to have sheetflowed in a counterclockwise pattern with respect to clockwise, rotating North America. It initially leveled everything in its path, leaving layers of strata that were extremely flat, yet covering thousands of square miles with minimal erosion between strata over multiple continents. This explains why Central Canada is eroded down to its Cambrian Shield.

The NU Flood Theory explains the finding that the cross-beds sedimentary depositions show the direction of the Flood 'sheetflow' changed in a counterclockwise direction (supporting the hypothesis that PanNoah rotated in a clockwise direction) resulting in the direction of the Flood to move from a northeast to a more western direction.

Over the first two phases of the Flood, the rapid sheet flow quickly laid massive amounts of sediments in waves of stratum packages. Like phase one, phase two could have happen within hours or days from the start of the Flood. The strata are packages of sediment from larger size aggregates on the bottom with smaller grade size aggregates laid level on top of each other, such that multiple packages were stacked on the top of each other like pancakes, producing 'megasequences.' Most likely all six of the 'megasequences' were laid down during the second phase as level strata, washing away anything that was laid down in the first phase. These 'megasequences' can be seen in the strata of the Grand Canyon. Nearly all the said Geological Column had been laid down before any of today's mountains had risen.

Flood - Phase 3

The third flood phase occurred when PanNoah came to a stop. As it did, PanNoah 'jack-knifed' and began to break into its continental parts, followed by their accompanying island. As continents broke apart, as did their islands, the breaking land masses coming to a stop forming today's mountains on the upper strata of newly laid sediment often miles in depth. When North and South America split away from Europe and Africa, it formed the Atlantic Ocean. The ocean floors swelled in the middle during the final spreading of the continents, forming the mid-oceanic ridge system. In this Flood model, it is unlikely the swelling of the mid-oceanic ridge was the initial 'fountains of the great deep' mentioned in Genesis 7:11 that occurred on day 'one' of the Flood, since it occurred in the later phases of the Flood event. (The 'fountains of the great deep' must have been the outpouring of magma that initially floated PanNoah as described in the first phase of the Flood.) The breaking up of PanNoah may have been on this first day, or in the immediate days afterwards.

The Floodwaters must have been approximately 3,000 feet to 6,000 feet by the end of phase two to be able to lay down the six 'megasequences' on a level plane before they were uplifted to become mountains, given that today's average elevation of the earth's land surface is approximately 2,600 feet. By the fortieth day, Genesis 7:17 says that the Floodwaters continued to raise ark above the earth, including above all the high mountains – i.e. Himylayan Mountains highest peak is 29,029 feet elevation. Massive amounts of magma and the Floodwaters continued to be pumped and fill the new ocean floors. By this time, the displacement of the water from the mantle and the ocean water flooded onto the fractured continents covering today's mountains by more than twenty feet before beginning to recede.

As the clockwise rotation of the breaking continents came to a stop with the massive layers of the sediment that then covered them, huge blocks of sediment miles deep shifted northward. It initially leveled, or planed, everything in its path, including any pre-Flood mountain ranges or any uplifts during the PanNoah clockwise rotation. The new mountain ranges cascaded over the pre-Flood mountain ranges and over the 'megasequences' strata. This was when most of the 'overthrust' occurred, an event typical in most continental mountain regions of the world. The Floodwaters then continued to rise over the newly formed mountain ranges - today's mountain ranges.

The swelling of the ocean floors forming the mid-ocean ridge may have easily risen five or more miles high by day forty. As the mid-oceanic ridge rose, massive amounts of the newly formed sediment that had covered the new ocean floors deluged toward the land, leaving very little sediment to cover the mid-oceanic ridge. In the Atlantic Ocean as the mid-oceanic ridge rose between breaking continents, massive amounts of sediments would have flowed away an east and west direction from the swelling mid-oceanic ridge toward land. North and South America's east coast would have been inundated while Europe and Africa's west coast was simultaneously inundated. This may give reason why the Appalachian Mountains was so eroded, and therefore assigned a much older age than other mountain ranges.

After the continents came to a stop, relative to today's earth coordinates, the Floodwaters now flowed in the opposite direction in a clockwise pattern, relative unabated, except for the obstruction of the tallest mountains. The Floodwaters no longer came from the north, but now from the south, in the same direction as the Asian mountains cascaded over each other. The south flow would also have to compete against the new currents of the displaced Floodwaters due to the swelling of the mid-oceanic ridges. Weeks after the start of the Flood, the Floodwaters no longer moved any specific direction.

By the end of this phase after the earth had flipped, the earth had begun to be fixed to its current axis of rotation. This was the case since islands and continents had settled in their final locations on the earth.

Flood – Phase 4

The ”floodgates of heaven” rained on the earth for forty days and night none-stop. The lava that now made up the new ocean floor that had initially heated and evaporated the ocean waters, had caused it to rain (heavy black soot rain from continuous volcanic activity within the mantle). After this time, this unique down-pour rain, like none other before or after, had come to a stopped. It continued to rain, but not as heavy or as continuous as before. While the lava was still very hot at its core, its outer surface in contact with the above ocean water cooled to become a harden crust to become an insulation so as not to further heat the ocean waters at the same rate as it had previously during the initial forty days of the Flood.

Flood – Phase 5

After 150 days, God remembered Noah and his family and the ark landed on the mountains of Ararat. The “springs of the deep” and the “floodgates of heaven” had been closed (past tense for both).[1] Therefore, any pumping of magma and Floodwater as a result of the flip of the earth had most likely ceased sometime between the 40th day and the 150th day.

The swelling of the mid-oceanic ridge began to subside, allowing the waters on the land to flow into the new ocean basins. The earth then began to shrink, the mid-oceanic ridge began to collapse resulting in tension stress perpendicular to centerline that resulted in normal faulting that resulted in its stair-step features along the centerline flanks. The peak of the mid-oceanic

[1] Genesis 8:2 (NIV).

ridge in many places would slightly concave (Fig. 6). Continents became seated in current their locations began to experience isostacy – buoyancy equilibrium of a less denser land mass over a greater density landmass or ocean floor. Ocean basins began to sink.

The shrinkage of the earth also caused the drawing of the Floodwaters back into the mantle like toothpaste is drawn back into a full tube after slightly being squeezed. This allowed the Floodwaters to quickly drain off the face of the earth. The earth would never return back to its original, once smaller size.

Two-and-a-half months later, Genesis 8:5, "the top of the mountains" were visible in the mountains of Ararat. There are two possibilities. First, the mountain peak that God placed the Ark was the highest peak with respect to all the other surrounding mountain peaks that were covered by the Floodwaters. This implies that the water did not go down very fast during this time, or the other surrounding mountain peaks were much lower. Landing on the highest peak would most likely make it very difficult for Noah and his family and all the animals on the Ark to traverse down the mountain side into the valleys. Or second, the Ark landed on one of the lower peaks, or edges, of the mountains of Ararat allowing Noah, Noah's family and accompanying animal to leave the Ark safely and disperse. But, the surrounding peaks of the mountains of Ararat were not visible to Noah, not because the higher surrounding mountain peaks had not peaked through the Floodwaters, but because of heavy evaporation that caused a very dense fog due to the extremely warm, if not hot, diminishing Floodwaters from the outflowing of magma and water from the deep subterranean mantle transition zone. Since the surrounding air would have been much cooler, relative to the Floodwaters, the fog would have been constant and oppressive, most likely keeping the sky dark without the sun for months even after the 150th day of the Flood. It would seem to the ancients that the "sky had fallen".

Initially after the Flood, lasting 371 days, much of the Floodwaters were initially landlocked on the continents forming massive inland seas. Therefore, the sea-level was lower after the Flood event, till much of the landlocked water was able to be drain into the oceans. This allowed man and animals to migrate on dry land bridges between continents in many parts of the world just after the Flood, before the oceans began to fill. (Many of Noah's offspring may have gone by boat. Since Noah and his sons built the ark, they and their descendants were also ship builders with knowledge to navigate the oceans. Therefore, Noah's descendants may have taken to the seas scouting for new territory on other continents to establish new homes for their families as initially instructed by God to multiply and fill the earth – Genesis 9-1&7. Noah's descendants instead rebelled, not spreading out, but built a city later to be called Babel. So, when God later confused the language of this rebellious people, He split them into family groups according to their language and linage, and they were divided, and most likely, already knowing where they were assigned to go on the earth.) The inland seas eventually flowed to the ocean leaving remnant lakes, valleys and canyons as a reminder of the Flood. The upper stratum during the draining of the Floodwaters eroded the upper highland of the earth, leaving much of its sediment debris in the lowlands.

The said Ice Age began to develop immediately after the Flood. The new 5 km – 7 km (3 mi. – 4.4 mi.) lava ocean floors heated the ocean waters above it for hundreds of years to follow.

The ocean waters evaporated, then precipitated, dumping much snow onto cold interior continental land masses in the north and south latitudes. On both sides of the equator, heavy tropical storms and massive super-hurricanes were most likely prevalent. The upper air temperatures were much colder because of the thousands of super volcanoes that had erupted

filling the earth's atmosphere with tons of aerosols which blocked out the sunlight that made the earth's atmospheric temperatures colder. This in turn formed ice sheets and glaciers on the north and south spheres, leaving the equatorial band, with much rain, but without ice sheets. As a result of glaciers in the northern hemisphere having come from the north to the south, moraines were determined by scientist to have formed just south of the Great Lakes region[1]. Much of these features may have been mistaken as moraines features, but may have instead been the direct result of the Floodwaters sheetflowing from the north to the south. After hundreds of years, the ocean floors would cool, no longer giving off near as much heat, and the ocean waters would no longer evaporate at the higher rates. Ocean basin continued to sink. The ice sheets and glaciers began to melt, draining into the oceans. The sea levels began to rise and has been rising ever since. The rise was due to the Ice Age as a result of the Genesis Flood that caused the first 'global warming' from an imposing worldwide lava ocean floor as a result of man's sin against God, not his industrialization.

VI. Floodwaters in the Mantle!

A question often asked: "Where did the Floodwater come from?" Much of it came from the mantle. In Genesis 7:11, "…all the fountains of the great deep broke up, and the windows of heaven were opened [2]".

The NU Flood Theory contends that the earth flipped and quickly expanded, extruded massive volumes of magma covering the entire globe with oceans of water from the mantle,

[1] Edward J. Tarbuck & Frederick K. Lutgens, *Earth: An Introduction to Physical Geology*, copyright 2005, Pearson Education, Inc., Upper Saddle River, New Jersey 07458, ISBN 0-13-114865, pp 551.

[2] Genesis 9:11–17

particularly from the 'mantle transition zone'. The transition zone can be found between 410 km to 660 km (256 - 412 mi.) in depth. Today, it is well understood that the ocean floor is completely covered with mafic, basalt rock from melted or partially melted mantle rock. It is not well understood as to why it is this way. Recently, the mantle transition was discovered to contain oceans of water.

In *New Scientist* magazine, a rhetorical question was asked, "So how much water is stored in the mantle?" It then states, "Estimates vary from 10 to 30 times the amount in all the earth's present oceans. Is it possible for the mantle to suddenly release this water and for the earth to be 'drowned from below'[1]?"

> Scientists have long thought that the hot interior of the earth would be very dry, because the heat would have vaporized and driven off any water. But according to a report in New Scientist, certain minerals, even under the intense heat and pressure deep underground, can store lots of water.[1] Models of the mantle, that part of the earth between the molten core and the solid crust, and notably the **'transition zone'** between the upper and lower mantle, now describe it as **'sopping wet'**.[2]
>
> What's more, it seems that hot wet rocks are more unstable than hot dry rocks. This new information may now explain 'why massive volcanic outbursts suddenly flood[ed] hundreds of thousands of square kilometres [of land] with lava', as observed in a number of different parts of the geological record.[3] Who could ask for a more graphic description of the behavior of the 'fountains of the great deep'? It is interesting that even today, up to 70% or more of what comes out of volcanoes is water, mostly in the form of vapor.
>
> So how much water is stored in the mantle? ***Estimates vary from 10 to 30 times the amount in all the earth's present oceans***! Is it possible for the mantle to suddenly release this water and for the earth to be 'drowned from below'? The author concluded that a 'sudden outpouring of water, Noah-style', was unlikely.[4] His conclusion is consistent with God's promise to Noah, sealed by the sign of the

[1] Bergeron, L. Deep Waters. *New Scientist* 155(2097):22–26, August 30, 1997.

rainbow, never to destroy the earth with water again (emphases add) [1] (also see Genesis 9:11–17).

How many oceans would it take to cover the Himalayan Mountains? Approximately three and a half times today's total volume of present oceans. [2] These calculations assume that the ocean basins and the mid-oceanic ridge elevations were the same in the past as they are today. If the ocean basins were higher elevation in the past relative to the land, than it would have taken much less ocean water volume to cover the Himalayan Mountains.

It becomes clearer that the flipping of the earth, resulting in the expansion of the earth's outer mantle sphere, resulted in the decompression of the 'Transition Zone' of the mantle. This resulted in *decompression melting* of the mantle rock. It was the reason for the massive expulsion of magma and the outpouring of the Floodwaters of the great deep covered the ocean floors. [3]

Even more recently, March of 2014, scientists from the University of Alberta discovered more definitive evidence that there is a lot of water in the mantle. The evidence was found in a

---

[1] Bergeron, L. Deep Waters. *New Scientist* 155(2097):22–26, August 30, 1997.

[23] Smith, Wes. *Solving Noah's Flood,* (copyright 2012), Appendix C, Noah's Flood Depth

[3] http://creation.com/drowned-from-below
1) Bergeron, L., Deep Waters, New Scientist 155(2097):22–26, August 30, 1997.
2) The earth's crust is, on average, about 25 km (16 miles) thick, while the core is about 2,900 km (1800 miles) below the surface. The mantle transition zone extends roughly from a depth of 400 km (250 miles) to 670 km (420 miles).
3) Ref. 1, p. 23.
4) Ref. 1, p. 26.

rock called ‘ringwoodite’ that contains approximately 2.5% water. This mantle rock was found encapsulated in a diamond.

> In mid-June 2014, it was reported that researchers confirmed a 50-year old theory that the mantle transition zone contains oceans of water in a mineral called ‘ringwoodite’.
>
> Approximately 2.5 % of ringwoodite's composition is water, leading scientists to believe that a hidden reservoir exists deep within the Earth.
>
> Now -- that theory has proven correct.
>
> A study published Thursday has confirmed the existence of a massive water reservoir containing three times the volume of the Earth's oceans some 700 kilometres underground.
>
> The water, according to researchers at Northwestern University in Illinois, is concealed inside the ringwoodite, which lies inside the Earth's mantle -- i.e., the layer of rock between our planet's surface and core.
>
> "If it wasn't there, it would be on the surface of the Earth, and mountain tops would be the only land poking out." [1]

This science article dismantles the popular theory that all the water came from comets which was the kick-off for the evolution of life; but instead it suggests that the ocean waters

---

[1] *Hidden ocean found deep within the Earth* by Cheryl Santa Maria, Digital Reporter, Posted June 12, 2014: http://www.theweathernetwork.com/news/articles/hidden-ocean-found-deep-within-the-earth/29432/

Similar Articles posted June 12-13, 2014:
- *Worlds largest water reservoir found deep in earth*, Indo Asian News Service (IANS), https://en-maktoob.news.yahoo.com/worlds-largest-water-reservoir-found-deep-earth-053207381.html

- *Found Hidden Ocean Locked Up Deep in Earths Mantle*, Joseph Castro, Live Science Contributor http://news.yahoo.com/found-hidden-ocean-locked-deep-earths-mantle-181204475.html

migrated from the mantle itself. This article seems to agree that the ocean waters appear to be from deep within the mantle, as strongly suggested in Genesis 7:11, where all the Floodwaters sprang from the great deep. The assumption is that the waters deep in the mantle will not likely surface and cover the earth, but what is not consider is that the earth may have flipped or will flip in the future.

In a web article called *Huge 'Ocean' Discovered Inside Earth*, by Ker Than, it was noted that the mantle rock at approximately 620 miles in depth had a water content up to 15 percent, instead of 2.5 percent. This water is said to be trapped in the matrix of the rock. It would release itself if it were heated up [1]. This would have been the conditions during the Flood event that allowed the 'waters of the deep' to explode to the surface.

> Although they appear solid, the composition of some ocean floor rocks is up to 15 percent water. "The water molecules are actually stuck in the mineral structure of the rock," Wysession explained. "As you heat this up, it eventually dehydrates. It's like taking clay and firing it to get all the water out." [2]

The 15%, six time more than the 2.5% in the previous article, gives far more volume of subterranean ocean waters than previously known in the mantle. We should be confident that there is certainly more than enough volume of water in the mantle, plus the current volume of today's ocean waters, to cover all today's mountains of the world, including Mount Everest.

---

[1] *Huge 'Ocean' Discovered Inside Earth,* by Ker Than, Digital Reporter, February 28, 2007, Web Posted June 12, 2014: http://www.livescience.com/1312-huge-ocean-discovered-earth.html

[2] *Huge 'Ocean' Discovered Inside Earth, by Ker Than, Digital Reporter, February 28, 2007, Web Posted June 12, 2014: http://www.livescience.com/1312-huge-ocean-discovered-earth.html*

How did all this water escape from deep in the mantle to the earth's surface? The most likely possibility is that the earth flipped, resulting in centripetal forces that expanded its outer layers and shell. This is similar to a young girl whose Sunday's dress spreads out as she twirls. This resulted in a worldwide decompression of the transition zone, or mantle rock decompression melting. The earth cannot be simply thought of as the third rock from the sun that is not malleable under strained conditions. In 1990, Dr. John Baumgardner suggested that reducing the viscosity, or melting point, of the mantle would allow for rapid "large-scale tectonic change". [1] Max J. Hunter had proposed that the present geophysical/geological structure of the earth's mantle is the result of a sudden decompression of the pre-Flood earth, due to a sudden, temporary reduction of the magnitude of the gravitational constant (G). This is also similar to shaking a can of soda, then opening it to release the pressure, allowing the CO2 to escape to a lower atmospheric pressure and causing the soda to foam. This release of pressure over the mantle caused the mantle minerals to convert from a high-pressure to a low-pressure structure system, with a consequent decrease in density and an increase in volume, as the earth expanded radial by about 100 km (62 mi.). The result is a huge scale differentiation of the earth's mantle at 660 km (412 mi.) in depth resulting in massive ***decompression melting*** of the mantle rock in the transition zone between 410 km to 660 km (256 to 412 mi.), where another discontinuity in the mantle can be found. For this to be true, the flip of the earth gives the best explanation. This gives reason for the temporary weightlessness that the mantle would have experienced resulting

[1] *Journal of Creation*, Vol. 23(3), 2009,'Ophiolites: oceanic lithosphere mixed with continental lithosphere during the Genesis Flood, by Max J. Hunter, p. 87.

- Baumgardner, J.R, Mini symposium on variable constants-IX: imperative of non-stationary natural law in relaton to Noah's Flood, CRSQ 26:98-100,1990; p. 99.

in its separation of the upper and lower mantle. It best explains the effective, not real, temporary reduction of the magnitude of the gravitational constant (G) [1] as proposed by Max Hunter.

It's possible that the "fountains of the deep" may have come from even deeper depths than the mantle 'transition zone'.

> We now recognize that most intraplate volcanism occurs where a mass of hotter than normal mantle material called a **mantle plume** ascends toward the surface. Although the depth at which mantle plumes originate is still hotly debated, many appear to form deep within the Earth at the core-mantle boundary.[2]

In less than 150 days from the start of the Flood, the earth began to shrink to near, but not back to, its original size. As it did so, the earth had drawn much of the Floodwater back into the mantle where much of it initially originated. (also see discussion of Job 38 in, 'Bible Support' section.)

VII. Pre-Flood / Post Flood Mountains?

Did the Floodwaters cover the pre-Flood mountains or the Post Flood mountains? Does the Bible actually say that there were pre-Flood mountains?

Genesis 7:19

> (Floodwaters) rose greatly on the earth, and all the high mountains under the entire heavens were covered". [3]

Genesis 8:3-4

---

[1] *Journal of Creation*, Vol. 14(1), April 2000,'The pre-Flood/Flood boundary at the base of the earth's transition zone', by Max J. Hunter, p. 60-74.

[2] Edward J. Tarbuck & Frederick K. Lutgens, *Earth: An Introduction to Physical Geology*, copyright 2005, Pearson Education, Inc., Upper Saddle River, New Jersey 07458, ISBN 0-13-114865, pp 175.

[3] Genesis 7:19 (NIV)

> 3. The water receded steadily from the earth. At the end of the hundred and fifty days the water had gone down, 4. and on the seventeenth day of the seventh month the ark came to rest on the mountains of Ararat. [1]

The Bible does not make this distinction that the mountains of Genesis chapter seven (pre-Flood mountains, if any) are different, separate mountains from the mountains of chapter eight (post-Flood mountains) as do many creation scientists who are proponents of the Hydroplate Theory or the Catastrophic Plate Tectonic Theory. Neither does there appear to be a distinction for pre-Flood or post Flood mountains in Psalm 104:6 and Psalm 104:8, respectively. What this distinction does help is to make the other Creation Flood models more feasible.

Therefore, it would seem that the proof of burden is on those who believe that the Bible is referring to a distinction between pre-Flood mountains and post Flood mountains. Since there is not a natural distinction made in the Genesis 7:19 text written by Moses, who wrote Genesis much after the Flood, the natural reading of it is that the Flood water rose above the existing mountains of Moses day. For the record, mountains are not mentioned in Genesis until the Flood event, implying that mountains may not have existed before the Flood, and may have been the result of the Flood cataclysmic tectonic event. Therefore, the mountains mentioned in chapter seven may very well be the same mountains of today mentioned in chapter eight. This is the view of this author, also a creationist. In the NU Flood Theory, if there were pre-Flood mountains, the geological data shows that they were destroyed by the Flood. The basement rock below the Cambrian rock is a sheared plane across the total surface of all the continents. Also, there is simply no evidence of any mountain building in the Paleozoic and Mesozoic era of the said Geological Column. Even the tilted, crushed basement rock, resulting from the stopping of

[1] Genesis 8:3-4 (NIV)

PanNoah, can be seen in the bottom layers of the Grand Canyon, giving a false appearance of being part of an ancient mountainous region. It was sheared flat by the movement of unit-mass sediment above it at the start of the flood, that is now rock of the Geological Column.

Many creation scientists and many secular scientists, do not believe that it is possible for today's highest mountains, like the Himalayan Mountains, to be covered by the Flood, especially during the initial inundation stage of the Flood. They do not consider that there was significant Floodwaters that came from the mantle transition zone. They believe that most of the Floodwater must have come from the existing water on the surface of the earth (i.e. oceans, seas, lakes, rivers, ground water and clouds) as we know today. They simply do not believe that there is a physical mechanism for today's mountains to be covered by the Flood, given the known volume of water in today's oceans, seas and rivers. Therefore, many creation scientist have set an artificial maximum Flood elevation cap at approximately 9,000 feet above sea level by assuming that if all the earth's land mass were ground down and evenly dispersed across all the earth's oceans, as a round smooth sphere covered by today's ocean water, the sea-level would be approximately 9,000 feet above today's sea-level.[1] Therefore, if 9,000 feet is thought to be the maximum height of the Floodwaters and the maximum height of the mountains to be inundated by the Flood, how is it possible that the Flood covered the Himalayan Mountains at 29,029 feet elevation? Therefore, many creation scientists, believing that the Bible is the inerrant word of God, assume that the mountains covered by the Flood were less than 9,000 feet pre-Flood, and that the post Flood mountains (i.e. Ararat Mountains) must have formed just before the 150 days

[1] Don Batten, David Catchpoole, Jonathan Sarfati, & Carl Wieland, The Creation Answers Book, copyright 2018, Creation Ministries International (US) Inc., ISBN: 978-0-949906-62-5, pg. 175-178.

from the start of the Flood[1]. Many Catastrophic Plate Tectonic creationist believe that most of the mountains (i.e. Himalayan Mountains) were formed toward the end or after the Flood.[2] The Bible first records this day, the 150th day, as when God remembered Noah and his family when the Floodwaters had begun to recede and the ark rested on the mountains of Ararat, followed by the peaks of today's mountains that began to appear. If the volumes of ocean water in the subterranean mantle (i.e. mantle transition zone) were to explode to the earth surface due to its flip, then there is much more volume of subterranean water than is necessary to cover the Himalayan Mountains. We can trust the Bible when it said that it covered all the high hills and mountains – today's high hills and mountains.

A secondary concern is that, at such high elevations, how could Noah's family and the animals on the ark survive such cold with much less oxygen than at sea level? This question assumes that the same conditions that exist today, on top of every major mountain, would be the same conditions that must have existed during the Genesis Flood. The conditions during the Flood must have been much different. Noah's Upheaval Flood Theory perspective is that all of today's mountains were covered, including the Himalayan Mountains.

How was it possible? During the Flood, both hot magma and superheated Floodwaters were ejected from the mantle transition zone (410 km to 660 km depth, or 256 mi. to 412 mi. depth) to the surface of the earth in colossal plumes that Genesis called "fountains of the great deep," when the earth slightly expanded, the warm Floodwaters covered the entire earth, including every mountain. This requires a much higher percentage of Floodwater too have come

[1] Andrew A. Snelling, Earth's Catastrophic Past – Geology, Creation & the Flood, Vol.1, copyright 2009, Institute for Creation Research, P.O. Box 59029, Dallas, TX 75229, ISSN-13: 978-0-932766-94-6, www.icr.org, pg. 278.
[2] Don Batten, David Catchpoole, Jonathan Sarfati, & Carl Wieland, The Creation Answers Book, copyright 2018, Creation Ministries International (US) Inc., ISBN: 978-0-949906-62-5, pg. 176.

from the mantle than what is present in today's oceans. Therefore, a large portion of the Floodwaters heat came from the massive heat reservoirs deep within the earth's mantle. For the first 40 days, if not much earlier, the ark was lifted higher than the Himalayan Mountains (today, approx. five miles in height). Since all the surface of the earth became covered with a five to seven miles depth of magma, it heated the overlaying five miles, plus the Floodwaters above it. Not only did the Floodwaters rise but also the atmosphere, rich in oxygen, was pushed upward close to the rising Floodwater's surface. With the short time of the rising Floodwaters, the rich atmosphere was not allowed to permeate into its depth, nor dissipate upwards into space. Therefore, Noah's family and the animals on the ark would not have had any major issues with cold or breathing oxygen at such elevations as high as the Himalayan Mountains. After 150 days, the Floodwater was already receding.

VIII. Connecting the Dots

How do we know how the continents once fit together? Did it look like Pangaea (Fig. 2) or PanNoah (Fig. 10), or something else? How can we be reasonably sure? There are two primary ways to make this determination.

The first is to fit all the continent's segments into one mega-uni-mass, as one big puzzle. The easiest continental fit to identify is how South America fits into Africa, followed by how North America fits into Europe. It was less clear how Antarctica and Australia once fit into Africa, India and each other.

The second method is identifying the path that the "supercontinent" took and the tracks it left behind. The method to achieve this is to connect the continents by their slide and fracture marks. The Romanche Fracture Zone shows the south boundary where the huge offsets in the

Mid-Atlantic Ridge occurred showing evidence that South America snapped away from Africa. Falkland Escarpment connects the southern tip of South America to the Agulhas Ridge's southern tip of Africa, showing where the south tip of South America slid away from the south tip of Africa. In the Indian Ocean, Ninetyeast Ridge is the seam line where India and Africa joined Indonesia and Australia before their split. Broken Ridge delineates the direction that Australia broke away from Africa. The fracture marks dictate that the Tasmania Island portion of Australia once fit into the Ross Ice Shelf portion of Antarctica.

For the record, Plate Tectonics supporters have also in the past used similar analysis, but with obvious different conclusions. But, Plate Tectonics does not strictly determine the ancient paths of the breaking continents in forming Pangaea by connecting the path of the transverse fractures, since the proponents of Plate Tectonic are misguided by assumed locations of subduction (i.e. Himalayan Mountains and Appalachian Mountains) and their over confident zeal in the science of paramagnatism and magnetic anomalies that were used to determine the continents initial locations and Pangaea shape.

> The offsets at the transform faults are roughly parallel to the direction of relative plate motion. The offsets have the effect of keeping the axis perpendicular to the direction of spreading. ….The precise position of the faults and fracture zones on the ridge holds an excellent record of the kinematics of the plates: the history of the relative plate motions. [1]

Geophysicist of the past have noticed that there have been major catastrophic disturbances on a global scale based on worldwide faults. In *Earth in Upheaval*, Immanuel Velikovsky has observed:

---

[1] *Shaping the Earth, Tectonics of Continents and Oceans,* Readings from Scientific American, *The Oceanic Crust,* Jean Francheteau, September 1983, pp. 28.

> To the study of isostacy and its anomalies, F.A. Vening Meinesz, Dutch geophysicist and explorer of oceans, made many important contributions. He found in the very structure of the terrestrial crust signs of some violent displacements on a global scale. Thus, it is not merely in order to explain the climates of the past that the dislocation of the crust is postulated. In 1943, Vening Meinesz analyzed "the stresses brought about by a change in position of the rigid Earth's crust with regard to the axis of rotation of the Earth." In this analysis he surmised the crust "to have the same thickness everywhere and to behave as an elastic body. He pointed out that if we assume that the crust happened to ***move clockwise in relation to the core by over 70 degrees***, the expected effects "show a remarkable correlation to many major topographic features and also to the shearing patterns of large parts of the Earth's crust at some moment of its history has indeed shifted with regard to the Earth's poles and that the crust has undergone a corresponding ***block-shearing***. [1]

Third, there was a correlation of oil types on the east side of Brazil, South America that have common origin matching to the West Coast of Africa at approximately ten locations. Each oil field location has its own oil family with its own unique geochemical signature found on the opposite sides of the Atlantic. This is similar to everyone having a unique fingerprint.

> The geochemical differences found in the oils from north to south along the coasts depend on the uniqueness of the source rocks themselves and not the perceived age of the rocks. These data indicate similar source rock that were deposited at different locations up and down the coasts of both continents that were later separated …"[2]

---

[1] *Earth in Upheaval*, pp. 114.
- F. A. Vening Meinesz, "Spanningen in de aardrost tengevolge van poolverschuivingen" in *nederlandsche Akiademie van Wetenschappen Verslagen, Vol. LII, No. 5 (1943).*

[2] *Journal of Creation*, Vol. 30(1), 2016, *Empirical data support seafloor spreading and catastrophic plate tectonics*, by Timothy L. Clarey, ISSN 1036-2916, p. 79.

PanNoah is shown to be visually a far better fit than Pangaea. The PanNoah fits is not by accident, but the fit is simply determined by the geology features (mostly transverse fracture) of the ocean floor and features on land that explains the path of the continents and the stresses that were once placed on the earth surface. For the best continent fit into one continent, the continents are slightly warped, but not morphed (forced fit) as is the case of the Pangaea – the Plate Tectonic model.

IX. Slide, Stretch, but not Ride!

What are these slide/stretch marks? Slide /stretch marks are made of common geological features that are thousands of miles long and slender features found on the ocean floor that are linear or curved in nature. These features include transverse fractures that extend from continent to continent, ocean mountain ranges, volcanic seamounts, ridges and valleys, islands chain, as well as other long, curved features.

If the NU Flood Theory is true, there will be both slide and stretch marks between breaking continents all over the ocean surface of the earth. If the Plate Tectonic Theory is true, there should not be any slide marks or transverse fractures on the ocean floor. If the ocean floor is continually recreating itself at the mid-oceanic ridge and destroying itself at the subduction zones, then the buoyant continental crust should be riding over the lithosphere.

Instead there are many examples of sliding and stretching all over the globe. The following are a few examples of sliding, not riding, of land masses. The mid-ocean ridge and accompanying transverse fractures are an example of the earth's surface stretching as it expanded between catastrophic spreading of the continents. The trenches on the east side of Asia

in the Pacific Ocean are an example of PanNoah sliding and coming to a stop. The whip action of the islands of New Guinea, New Ireland, and West New Britain, above Australia, have slid and rotated counterclockwise 180 degrees based on the ocean floor impressions. It is nearly impossible to create these rotation features in the ocean floors by subduction - only the sliding of the islands at great speed is the better explanation. The same mechanism must have been true for the formation of Drakes Passage hairpin configuration as South America and Antarctica continents slid away from the southern tip of Africa. South America's impression can clearly be seen on the Ocean Floor. The Falkland Escarpment connects the southern tip of South America to the southern tip of Africa. If it had not slid, why is the hairpin orientation in its current configuration as opposed to being orientated north or west? The ancient hot spot symmetrical Seamount Chain between Africa and the Americas may very likely be the result of the ocean floor stretching. Therefore, the sliding of the continents over a stretching, expanding ocean floor verses riding of the continents, better represents the evidence for the NU Flood Theory. [1]

X. The Mohorovicic Discontinuity

. The Mohorovicic Discontinuity, or Moho, lies over today's mantle between the overlaying ocean and continental crust. This thin layer covers most, if not all, of the surface to the earth [2]. In the NU Flood Theory, the Moho may very well be the slick, plane that the, earth's crust, PanNoah, slid over. It may also be what covers the upper limits of what the Bible calls the

[1] Smith, Wes. *Solving Noah's Flood*, (copyright 2012), Appendix C, Noah's Flood Depth

[2] *Shaping the Earth, Tectonics of Continents and Oceans,* Readings from Scientific American, *The Oceanic Crust,* Jean Francheteau, September 1983, pp. 24.Wikipedia, the free encyclopedia: printed 10-14-2010

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mohorovi%C4%8Di%C4%87_discontinuity

"foundations of the earth" since both the continents and ocean crust rest on the Moho that lies over the mantle. A case will later be made that the "mantle" is what the Bible calls the "foundations of the earth".

There is a discontinuity that lies almost entirely within the lower limits of the ocean crust and the upper limits of the mantle. The exception is at the mid-oceanic ridge where the boundary is defined by both the lithosphere and the asthenosphere. Under the continental crust, the discontinuity is the boundary between the continental crust and the underlying mantle. This discontinuity boundary is called the Mohorovicic discontinuity or the Moho. This discontinuity also defines the boundary between the earth's crust, the ocean crust and continental crust, and the mantle. It is believed that the crust above the discontinuity, or the mantle, is made up of mafic, gabbro rock which lies above the denser peridotite mantle rock. The gabbro rock is believed to be derived from melted peridotite rock. This is apparent evidence that ocean crust was initially in its lava state (or magma state if it were being pump from the mantle/core interior) when the continents slide over it.

The Mohorovicic discontinuity was first identified in 1909 by Andrija Mohorovicic, a Croatian seismologist, when he observed that seismograms from shallow-focus earthquakes had two sets of P-waves and S-waves, one that followed a direct path near the Earth's surface and the other refracted by a high velocity medium. [1]

---

[1] ^ *a* *b* Andrew McLeish (1992). *Geological science* (2nd ed.). Thomas Nelson & Sons. p. 122. ISBN 0174482213. http://books.google.com/?id=rhkgwEvrVe8C&pg=PA122.

The Mohorovicic discontinuity is 5 - 10 km (3 – 6 mi.) below the ocean floor and 20 to 90 km (10 – 60 mi.) beneath typical continents, with an average of 35 km (22 mi.).[1] Immediately above the Moho, the velocities of primary seismic waves (P-waves) are approximately those of basalt (6.7 – 7.2 km/s), and below they are that of peridotic, or dunitic, Earth-materials (7.6 – 8.6 km/s).[2]

**** This suggests that the Moho marks a change in composition, but interface appears to be too even for any believable sorting mechanism with the Earth. Near-surface observations suggest such sorting produces an irregular surface. Some forensic analysis suggestions the Moho discontinuity appears to be boundary marks instead of a phase change controlled by a temperature gradient in the Earth, as evaluated by Howell.[3]

It is not always clear where the Mohorovicic discontinuity, or Moho, should be found. There are four distinct ocean crust layers from top to bottom as follows: 1) Deep-sea sediment, 2) Basaltic pillow lavas, 3) Sheeted dike complex, and 4) gabbro (over layered gabbro) [4] . In the Fig 8.2, *Shaping the Earth, Tectonics of Continents and Oceans*, the Moho is shown to be

---

[1] ^ James Stewart Monroe, Reed Wicander (2008). *The changing Earth: exploring geology and evolution* (5th ed.). Cengage Learning. p. 216. ISBN 0495554804. http://books.google.com/?id=jFPMa4MxwJkC&pg=PA216.

[2] ^ RB Cathcart & MM Ćirković (2006). Viorel Badescu, Richard Brook Cathcart, Roelof D. Schuiling. ed. *Macro-engineering: a challenge for the future*. Springer. p. 169. ISBN 1402037392. http://books.google.com/?id=5bZBEM31K1MC&pg=PA169.

[3] ^ Benjamin Franklin Howell (1990). *An introduction to seismological research: history and development*. Cambridge University Press. p. 77 *ff*. ISBN 0521385717. http://books.google.com/?id=3LSW6xQxr0kC&pg=PA77.

[4] *Shaping the Earth, Tectonics of Continents and Oceans,* Readings from Scientific American, *Ophiolites,* Ian G. Gass, August 1982, pp. 116.

between the gabbros (Layer 4) and the peridotites (mantle) boundary [1] . Other seismologists believe it to be located between Layer 3 and Layer 4.

> Some seismologists argue that there is an additional low-velocity zone between Layer 3 and Layer 4 corresponding to the transition from the crust to the mantle, but the evidence for such a layer is scanty. It is known that the transition from the crust to the mantle takes place over a distance of three or four kilometers. Waves with a wavelength short enough to give a high-resolution picture of the Moho, however, become quite attenuated in traveling to the bottom of the crust and back to the surface, and therefore little is known in detail about the transition layer. [2]

How important was the Mohorovicic Discontinuity in 1962 in the early formation of the Plate Tectonic Theory? According to Dr. Don L. Anderson, it was crucial to all the theories of isostasy[3] and tectonics of that day. In fact, he proposed a new idea that the earth's features were the result of lithosphere and asthenosphere boundaries to make continental drift feasible. This became a major tenant of the Plate Tectonics which later became the standard model of geology. Mohorovicic Discontinuity lost its once important status.

> Almost all present theories of isostasy and tectonics, including those concerned with mountain building, faulting and the possible drifting of the continents, focus attention on the Mohorovicic discontinuity, which divides the crust of the earth from the mantle. If the picture I tried to outline in this article is correct, the important discontinuity is farther down, at the ill-defined boundary of the rigid lithosphere and the weaker asthenosphere. Most of the activity responsible for the broad-scale features of the earth's surface probably takes place in a low-velocity or

[1] Edward J. Tarbuck & Frederick K. Lutgens, *Earth: An Introduction to Physical Geology*, copyright 2005, Pearson Education, Inc., Upper Saddle River, New Jersey 07458, ISBN 0-13-114865, pp 398.

[2] *Shaping the Earth, Tectonics of Continents and Oceans,* Readings from Scientific American, *The Oceanic Crust,* Jean Francheteau, September 1983, pp. 36.

[3] *Isostasy – The concept that Earth's crust is "floating" in gravitational balance upon the material of the mantle.*

> plastic layer at the top of the asthenosphere, extending roughly from 60 to 250 kilometers in depth. In particular the existence of such a plastic layer ***makes the idea of continental drift much more plausible*** than it has seemed heretofore. [1] (emphasis added)

Why did the Mohorovicic Discontinuity lose its prominents with uniformitarian scientists? It was certainly not because the Mohorovicic Discontinuity lacked discontinuity between rock layers. In fact, the discontinuity between the lithosphere and the asthenosphere is only a distinction of temperature only – virtually a distinction without a distinction. This change was simply necessary because the Mohorovicic Discontinuity was simply not deep or plastic enough to make the theory of Plate Tectonic "plausible" or solvent.

In a geology college text book, *EARTH, An Introduction to Physical Geology*, it notes a compositional difference between the upper crust and the lower crust. The lower crust is more similar to basalt, or ocean floor rock, than the granitic upper crust. This strongly implies that its source came from an underlying boiling ocean floor. It also implies that where the lower crust meets the ocean floor crust, this boundary is nearly indistinguishable from each other. Therefore, a strong case can be made that today's ocean floor crust still underlies all the continental crust. This boundary defines the Moho discontinuity.

> Unlike the oceanic crust, which has a relatively homogenous chemical composition, the continental crust consists of many rock types. The upper crust has an average composition of a *granitic rock* called *granodiorite*, whereas the composition of the lowermost continental crust is more akin to basalt. [2]

---

[1] *Continents Adrift,* Readings from Scientific American, *The Plastic Layer of the Earth'sMantle,* Don L. Anderson, July 1962, pp. 35.

[2] Edward J. Tarbuck & Frederick K. Lutgens, *Earth: An Introduction to Physical Geology*, copyright 2005, Pearson Education, Inc., Upper Saddle River, New Jersey 07458, ISBN 0-13-114865, pp 71.

In *Readings from Scientific American*, *Continents Adrift*, an article "The Origin of Continents", by Marshall Kay, September 1955, gives a description of the Mohorovicic discontinuity. [1] What makes this article interesting is that it pre-dates the concept of ocean spreading and subduction that came in the early 1960's. The attached article does not address the concept of 'subduction'. Instead, you will notice that the mafic, basalt ocean floor underlines both the granitic continents and granitic islands (not volcanic in origin) at the Moho Discontinuity. Dr. Kay makes the following statement about basaltic ocean crust underlying the continents.

> "The continental blocks are not granitic all the way down: at their base, they have a layer of basalt, like the rock of the ocean basins." [2]

He further discusses the basaltic ocean crust underlying islands.

> "Some areas of the earth crust are neither strictly continental nor strictly oceanic – they seem to combine a little of both! These areas are the island archipelagoes: the islands of Japan; the chain consisting of the Philippines, the East Indies and New Guinea; nearer home, the West Indies. The principal islands in such chains have a dominantly continental character: their rock is chiefly granitic and the crust goes deeper than the ocean basins. Yet each chain also includes parts which are dominantly oceanic; that is, they are underlain by a thin layer of basaltic rock (covered with sediments) and the crust is comparatively shallow". [3]

He defines the Mohorovicic discontinuity as,

> "…a transition zone between crystalline (continental rock), basaltic rock (ocean rock) and denser, noncrystalline rock (mantle) beneath." [4] (added emphasis)

---

[1] *Continents Adrift,* Readings from Scientific American, *The Origins of Continents,* Marshall Kay, September 1955, pp. 16.

[2] *Continents Adrift,* Readings from Scientific American, *The Origins of Continents,* Marshall Kay, September 1955, pp. 17.

[3] *Continents Adrift,* Readings from Scientific American, *The Origins of Continents,* Marshall Kay, September 1955, pp. 17.

The quote below is also from *Scientific American*, written in 1959. It illustrates that at this point of time in history, geologists believed that all the continents made up of granitic rock (sialic) were floating basaltic (somatic) rock that overlies the earth's mantle over the Mohorovicic discontinuity. The following uplift analysis in question is regarding the Colorado Plateau.

> The problem of the uplift of large plateau areas is one which has puzzled students of the Earth's crust for a very long time. … Given an Earth with sialic [granitic] continents floating in denser somatic [basaltic] substratum, what mechanism would cause a large volume of low standing continents to rise rapidly a mile in the air? Furthermore, evidence from gravity surveys suggests that the rocks underlying the Colorado plateau are in isostatic balance, that is, this large area is floating at its correct seismic evidence confirms this, in that the depth in the M discontinuity [the Moho] under the Colorado plateau is approximately 10 kilometers [6 miles] greater than over most of continental North America. [1]

As the NU Flood Theory requires, the ocean floor crust underlies all the continents and islands if they were to have slid over it. Mohorovicic discontinuity is "the transition zone between crystalline, basaltic rock and denser, noncrystalline rock beneath." [2] . The crystalline is the granitic continental rock while the basaltic rock is the ocean floor rock, and the noncrystalline rock is the mantle rock. Further, it goes on to say that, "The continental blocks are not granitic all the way down: at their base, they have a layer of basalt, like the rock of the ocean basins." [3] This would imply that the basaltic ocean crust underlies all the continents. Further, the article also shows an illustration of the ocean crust (called 'sima') underlying the

---

[4] *Continents Adrift,* Readings from Scientific American, *The Origins of Continents,* Marshall Kay, September 1955, pp. 16.

[1] Brown, Walter. ***In the Beginning:, Compelling Evidence for Creation and the Flood****, Seventh Edition,* (Phoenix, AZ: Center For Scientific Creation, 1995),ISBN 1-878026-08-9, Liquefaction: The Origin of Strata and Layered Fossils, pg 96.

[2] *Continents Adrift,* Readings from Scientific American, *The Origins of Continents,* Marshall Kay, September 1955, pp. 16.

granitic continental coast, under the trough and granitic island (called 'sial'), and the ocean crust to overlying the mantle rock (called 'ultrabasic rock'). A portion of its description reads, "CONTINENTAL COAST AND VOLCANIC ISLAND are shown in a generalized cross section. 'Sial' is rock rich in silica and alumina and 'sima' is rock rich in silica and magnesium. The boundary between sima and ultrabasic rock is called the Mohorovicic discontinuity." [1] An older definition of the Mohorovicic discontinuity was "The boundary between sima and ultrabasic rock," or the ocean floor and the mantle. 'Sial', or continental rock, is not even included in the definition. Since the Moho discontinuity was noted by geophysicist to underly much of the continents, the 'sial' (continental rock) must overlie the 'sima' (ocean floor) which must overlie the ultrabasic rock (mantle), therefore; the ocean floor covers the whole earth, including under the continents. In short, this gives possibility that the continents slid over the ocean floor when the ocean floor was in a molten state. This magma from the transitional zone which became the thin sliding surface that encompasses the outer earth's surface that became the Moho Discontinuity.

Today, the Moho is simply defined as the boundary between the ocean/continental crust and mantle. The boundary was thought to be a distinction of composition between the crust and the mantle. Note that the crust may be defined as ocean crust or continental crust. There is a 'slight of hand' change in definition in that the Moho may be the boundary between the ocean floor and the mantle or the boundary between the continental rock and the mantle. For the Moho to be under the continental option, it does not require that the 'sial' (continental rock) overlies

---

[3] *Continents Adrift,* Readings from Scientific American, *The Origins of Continents,* Marshall Kay, September 1955, pp. 17.

[1] *Continents Adrift,* Readings from Scientific American, *The Origins of Continents,* Marshall Kay, September 1955, pp. 18-19.

the ‘sima’ (ocean floor) that overlies the ultrabasic rock (mantle). In other words, there is no longer a recognition by many uniformitarians that there is ocean crust below the continents, since it is not well understood why it should be under the deep interior of the continents in the Plate Tectonic Theory. From the Plate Tectonic Theory perspective, why go there to stir-up unnecessary controversy.

In a recent article, called *Worlds largest water reservoir found deep in earth*, it notes that the mantle may have oceans full of water. It also notes that that North America is underlined with magma at deep depths. This magma may be the evidence for the ‘sima’ (ocean floor) that underlies North America, and perhaps the beginning of further evidence that all the continents are underlined with ‘sima’ rock.

> Researchers from Northwestern University and University of New Mexico have found deep pockets of magma located beneath North America, a likely signature of the presence of water at these depths. [1]

A more recent 2014 article does confirm an ocean floor crust under North America.

> Some of the clearest shapes in the new mantle map are ancient relics. Earlier studies have shown North America sits above a graveyard for discarded pieces of old ocean floor. [2]

---

[1] *Worlds largest water reservoir found deep in earth*, Indo Asian News Service (IANS), https://en-maktoob.news.yahoo.com/worlds-largest-water-reservoir-found-deep-earth-053207381.html

[2] *Continent-Sized Scan Reveals US Underbelly,* By Becky Oskin, http://news.yahoo.com/continent-sized-scan-reveals-us-underbelly-135216514.html, Yahoo, 12-8-2014.

In a 1983 article called *The Ocean Crust*, Jean Francheteau describes the future hopes of better detecting the Moho in the conclusion. This article confirms a "…thin layer that covers ***most*** of the surface of the earth." [3]

> Given the inevitable lag between observation and the formulation of new theories, in the next decade there could be developed a new and more accurate picture of the thin layer that covers most of the surface of the earth. [2]

If the continents are underlined at the Moho Discontinuity with basaltic ocean crust, then neither the Plate Tectonic Theory nor Catastrophic Plate Tectonic Theory easily explains this possibility as to why the basaltic ocean floor underlines the continents and the islands. This is because both now believe that the continents rode on top the lithospheric and asthenospheric plates, not slide.

In the lecture notes of Professor John Tarney's, University of Leicester, titled *Plate Tectonics: Geological Aspects*, there are several strange anomalies that do not fit the Plate Tectonic Theory and these are **'superplumes'** and **'underplated**' at the Moho.

> Knowledge of mantle petrology and the constitution of the deeper mantle is important to trying to understand several aspects of plate tectonics. For instance, is there whole mantle convection or two-layer convection? What are mantle plumes? What are superplumes? Does the subducting slab penetrate into the lower mantle? What happens to the slab at depth? Is the sub-continental mantle different from the oceanic mantle? [3]

---

[3] *Shaping the Earth, Tectonics of Continents and Oceans,* Readings from Scientific American, *The Oceanic Crust,* Jean Francheteau, September 1983, pp. 40

[2] *Shaping the Earth, Tectonics of Continents and Oceans,* Readings from Scientific American, *The Oceanic Crust,* Jean Francheteau, September 1983, pp. 40

[3] https://www.le.ac.uk/gl/art/pdfdocs/intromna.pdf , 1998 lecture

Mafic rocks have been exhumed and studied. But since there is still so much that we do not know about the lower crust or the mantle of the earth, uniformitarians cannot make any determination as to if there is whole mantle convection or two-layer convection. If they cannot be sure of this, how can they say with any confidence that there is any convection at all! If there is no convection then there is no legitimacy for the Plate Tectonic Theory.

Given the thousands of dormant volcanoes in all the oceans of the world, there is much more evidence for once mantle plumes, even superplumes. In fact, there is evidence that the lower crust, the Moho region, is **'underplated**'.

> Though we know quite a lot about the upper crust, there is still quite a lot of uncertainty about the lower crust. Is there a real Conrad discontinuity separating the lower from the upper crust? Is the lower crust made up of dry granulite-facies rocks? Is it more mafic than the upper crust, perhaps as a result of intrusion of mafic magmas into the lower crust (called "underplating"). Or, is it more mafic as a result of extraction of silicic granitic magmas from the deep crust? [1]

It is becoming more evident that the lower crust is actually more mafic than the upper crust. So, how did it get this "underplating," or how did the Conrad discontinuity form?

> With both compositions the transformation was found to be gradual. The disappearance of the low density phase (plagioclase) and its replacement by the high density phases (garnet and jadeite) occurred over a pressure range of ca 10 kb (+ ca 25 km). **Thus the MOHO cannot be transformation and must be a compositional transition.** [2] (emphasis add)

The evidence for "underplating" becomes even more mounting as subsurface mafic rocks are exhumed. These rocks are often tested in laboratories, testing mafic rocks as they go through

---

[1] https://www.le.ac.uk/gl/art/pdfdocs/intromna.pdf , 1998 lecture

[2] https://www.le.ac.uk/gl/art/pdfdocs/intromna.pdf , 1998 lecture

phase changes under higher temperatures and pressures. In this, "underplating" becomes more assured and that the Moho has its own compositional distinctions. From a NU Flood Theory perspective, this "underplating" of the crust compositional difference of the Moho came about as PanNoah slid over the now South Pacific Ocean and the blow-torching the underbelly of the continental crust formed the slide plane composition distinct to the Moho discontinuity.

> But we do have a reasonable picture of what happened at the catastrophic initiation of the Flood. Huge plumes of molten rock blasted the underside of the earth's crust like massive blow-torches. [1]

Therefore, NU Upheaval Flood Theory very much supports the position that the basaltic ocean crust underlies all the continents by the discovery of ocean crust under the continents and island and the "underplating" of the continental crust. If this position is proven to be false by seismologists, this theory will be found invalid.

XI. Magnetic Anomalies and the Ocean Floor

In the early 1960's, Harry Hess of Princeton University proposed the idea of seafloor spreading where the mantle spreads laterally carrying the seafloor away in a conveyor-belt fashion from the mid-oceanic ridge, later to be subducted at the ocean trenches. Several years later, Fred Vine and D. H. Matthews discovered geomagnetic reversals that initially seem to support seafloor spreading. Geophysicists were beginning to accept that the earth's magnetic

---

[1] *Answers*, April-June 2014, Volume 9, No. 2, Dr. Andrew A Snelling, Ph.D, Noah's Lost World, pg. 84.
Ref. 8 and A. Johansson, "From Rodinia to Gondwana with the 'Samba' Model—A Distant View from Baltica Towards Amazonia and Beyond,"Precambrian Research (2013), http://dx.doi.org/10.1016/j.precamres.2013.10.012.

field was periodically reversing every hundred thousand years where magnetic north pole and magnetic south pole reversed. The evidence of seafloor spreading seemed to have been supported by patterns of alternating stripes of high and low intensity of magnetism that was thought to have been developed when lava extruded from the mid-oceanic ridge then solidified with the same polarity of that given time period. [1]

How does the NU Flood Theory solve the magnetic anomaly mystery? The 'slurry polarity', as called by this author, gives strong evidence that the entire ocean floor was in a lava state at the same time – not solid rock. When the earth flipped, magma erupted from the mantle to the surface in hundreds of thousands of volcanic plumes. The entire ocean floor was flooded with lava at one time, five to seven kilometers deep. The eruption of earthquakes and volcanoes at this time had no comparison in history. The newly poured lava vibrated nearly level, similar to concrete being leveled by the vibration of a concrete vibrator on the construction site by continuous earthquakes and volcanic eruptions. The new lava ocean floor transferred tremendous heat to the overlaying ocean as the Floodwaters simultaneously exploded from the hot mantle to the ocean surface. Both the cooling of the lava ocean floor and the Floodwaters of the deep resulted in the atmosphere becoming saturated with moisture and soot giving reason for the rain that fell continuously for 40 days and night as mentioned in Genesis in chapter six.

The lava eventually cooled, reaching the Curie temperature (about 585° C for magnetite) where the micro-iron particles in the lava became magnetized. But, the alignment of the iron particles in the lava rock did not necessarily align to magnetic north or south. The micro-iron particles can be thought of as trillions of miniature north/south magnetic bars that are far more

[1] Edward J. Tarbuck & Frederick K. Lutgens, *Earth: An Introduction to Physical Geology*, copyright 2005, Pearson Education, Inc., Upper Saddle River, New Jersey 07458, ISBN 0-13-114865, pp 48-49.

influenced by their adjacent magnetic particles than the physical location of magnetic north or south. Therefore, just as with any singular adjacent north/south magnetic bars, the north and south poles attract, and the similar poles repel each other. It is not possible for all the magnetic bars to align themselves to the north pole without some repelling south. In a similar manner, the iron particles in the lava that cooled to the Curie temperature were greatly influenced by their adjacent iron particles. The effect was magnetic anomalies, or magnetic striping, which resulted over the ocean floor surface. At depths, the localized magnetic influence of adjacent particles had a more checkered pattern. [1]

Similarly, volcanic mountains all over the world also have magnetic anomalies. As volcanoes erupt, lava covers these mountains in horizontal layers. As the lava cools and reaches Currie's temperature, every micro-iron particle begins to magnetize with or opposed to their adjacent micro-iron particles. Similar to the ocean floor, the magnetic anomalies for volcanoes will form a checkered pattern for each layer and in depth. [2]

To illustrate the above basic principle how magnetic anomaly can easily be created from a local magnetism, without the Curie temperature issue, consider the below 'New Magnetic Nail Color' by Sally Hansen advertisement, Fig. 30. Like ocean lava during the Flood event, both are infused with micro iron particles that is in a fluid state such that their magnetic anomalies are affected by a local magnetic influence (waving a magnet over the wet nail polish) before

[1] Smith, Wes. *Solving Noah's Flood*, (copyright 2012), Appendix C, Noah's Flood Depth

[2] Edward J. Tarbuck & Frederick K. Lutgens, *Earth: An Introduction to Physical Geology*, copyright 2005, Pearson Education, Inc., Upper Saddle River, New Jersey 07458, ISBN 0-13-114865, pp 51.

hardening. The polarity of either is not required to be magnetic north or magnetic south. In the case of the nail polish, its wave effect can be beautifully created in seconds!

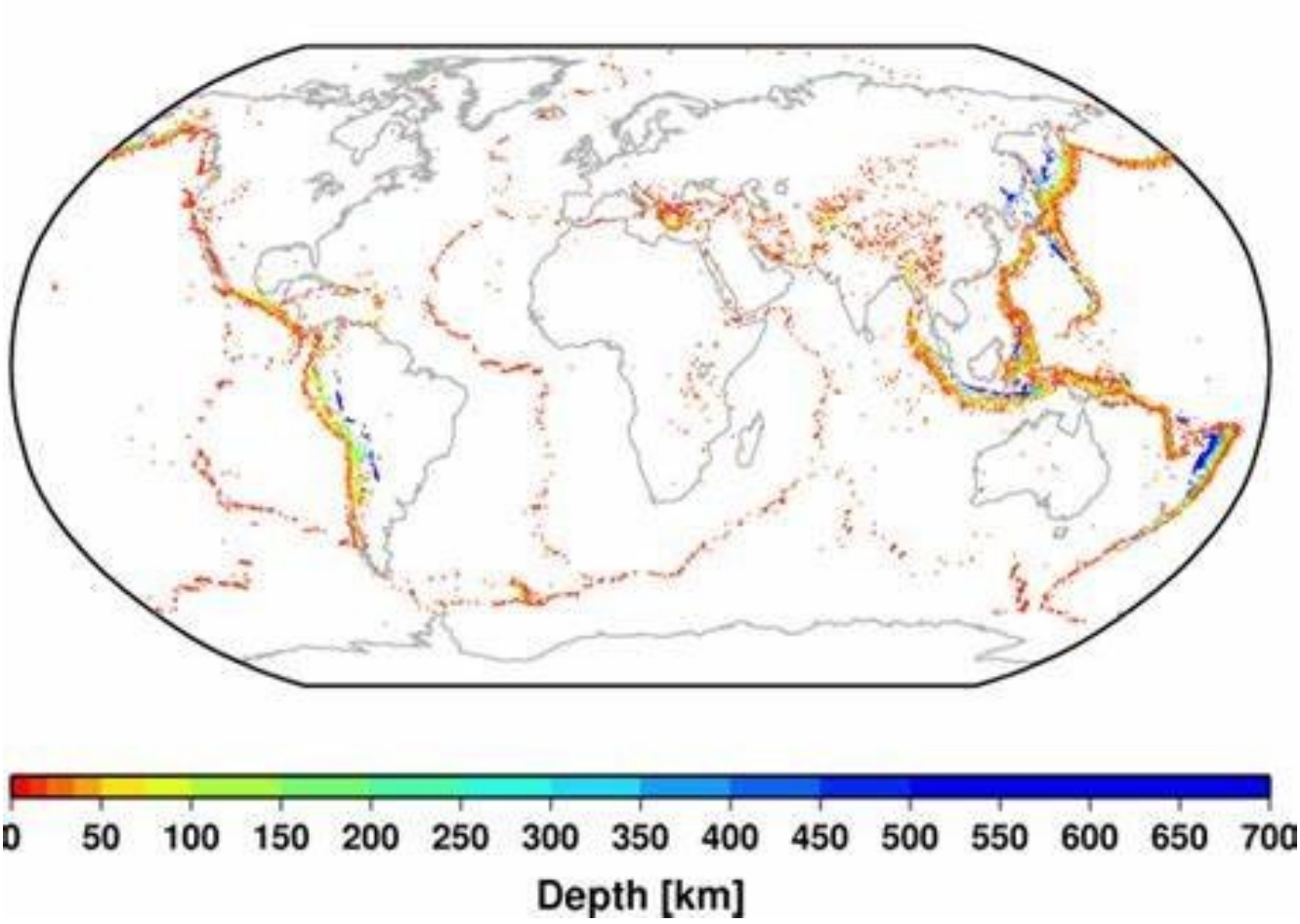
Fig. 30
Magnetic Nail Polish – Magnetic Anomaly

The above nail polish advertisement illustrates the basic principle of magnetic anomalies as proposed by the NU Flood Theory

- See footnote. [1]

[1] 'New Magnetic Nail Color' by Sally Hansen advertisement

- **NOT Approved!**



NASA Worldwide Map of Earthquakes and their depths.
Figure 31 [1]

[1] https://www.bing.com/images/search?view=detailV2&ccid=ixiESrKE&id=F0D6CE1160AAB980FDB5581EFB53381FC7AF371D&thid=OIP.ixiESrKEzlwDAW02VhZl7gHaFP&mediaurl=http%3A%2F%2Fi.livescience.com%2Fimages%2Fi%2F000%2F056%2F105%2Fi02%2Fglobal_map.jpg%3F1377194718&exph=407&expw=575&q=nasa+world+earthquake+map&simid=608015967170791785&ck=CAB44D25ACFB4C5126916B8476362BC4&selectedindex=15&ajaxhist=0&pivotparams=insightsToken%3Dccid_A3Azsxyq*cp_F9F26A5A8E035F93AF3E3EBAB7FD9745*mid_688E20A22886CFDBC99C9DB382F7B9A45A3E4402*simid_608037832782186566*thid_OIP.A3AzsxyqkgdOb55bEETNdwHaE8&vt=0&sim=11&iss=VSI&first=1&scenario=ImageBasicHover

XII. Earthquakes, Volcanoes & Ring of Fire – w/o Subduction!

How did the Ring of Fire or any other earthquakes and volcanoes and their placement come about? The NU Flood Theory differs from the Plate Tectonic Theory in that it does not believe that the earth plates subducted in the traditional manner. Instead, it contends that the volcanoes and earthquakes are the result of the flip of the axis of the earth (Fig. 32) by a process that this author has called '***Sling Tectonics***.'

The earth is currently rotating about a thousand miles per hour at the equator. Therefore, when the earth flipped, just like a spherical gyroscope in space, its equator continued to rotate at approximately a thousand miles per hour. The tangential forces resulted in every adjacent rock particle colliding into each other, melting rock at the outer spheres of the earth. The greater distance from the earth's core, the greater the rotational moment forces. The mantle may have expanded by as much as several percent, including the mantle transition zones. This expansion resulted in massive amounts of melt that exploded to the surface forming volcanoes all over the face of the earth during the Flood.

This earth flip resulted in three changes to the mantle rock that lead it to melt covering the entire surface of the earth – 1) it increased heat as adjacent rock particles collided into each other, 2) reduced the confined pressure (equal pressure from all direction at depth) at a specific depths as the earth expanded (i.e. decompression melting), and 3) added water as the Floodwaters exploded from the mantle transition zone to the earth's surface (i.e. volatile contaminant) decreased the melting point of rock deep within the lithosphere or mantle.

> Estimates indicate that the temperature at a depth of 100 kilometers range between 1200° C and 1400° C. At these high temperatures, rocks in the lower

> crust and upper mantle are near but somewhat below their melting points. Thus, they are very hot but still essentially solid.[1]

If the heat were to increase, the rock would reach its melting point and begin to melt and rise to the surface. But melting rock, including mantle rock, may also be induced without increasing heat by reducing the confined pressure, or by adding water at deep depths. The magma changes back to rock as this dynamic is reversed.

> Rock that is near its melting point may begin to melt if the confining pressure drops or if fluids (volatiles) are introduced.[2]

And,

> Notice that dry granite and dry basalt melt at higher temperatures with increasing depth. By contrast, the melting temperature of wet granite actually decreases as the confining pressure increases. [3]

The centripetal (tangential) forces resulted in the swelling of the upper mantle creating the emergence of today's ocean floor above it. This is similar to a young girl whose Sunday's dress spreads out as she twirls. This would have been especially true for the mantle transition zone and the mantle above it. The separation of the mantle at the transition zone allowed a reduction in confined pressure that then resulted in mantle rock reaching its melting point without raising its temperature. The Floodwaters and magma randomly exploded vertically to

[1] Edward J. Tarbuck & Frederick K. Lutgens, *Earth: An Introduction to Physical Geology*, copyright 2005, Pearson Education, Inc., Upper Saddle River, New Jersey 07458, ISBN 0-13-114865, pp 124

[2] Edward J. Tarbuck & Frederick K. Lutgens, *Earth: An Introduction to Physical Geology*, copyright 2005, Pearson Education, Inc., Upper Saddle River, New Jersey 07458, ISBN 0-13-114865, pp 124

[3] Edward J. Tarbuck & Frederick K. Lutgens, *Earth: An Introduction to Physical Geology*, copyright 2005, Pearson Education, Inc., Upper Saddle River, New Jersey 07458, ISBN 0-13-114865, pp 126

the mantle's surface as a million volcanic blow-torches on the ocean floors in the form of volcanoes because of the tangential forces and the earth's pressure increases at depth. As the magma reached the earth's surface, it horizontally filled the total surface of the earth, including under all landmasses, to become the new, emerged ocean floor. The mantle beneath ballooned and then began to subside. This caused a rippling, ocean floor magma tsunami effect in the emerging ocean floor which created waves to be disseminated from the once swelling, center of the Pacific Ocean toward land, similar to the outward ripples from a stone thrown in a pond. This, in effect, resulted in tsunami, lava waves crashing and compressing, toward breaking land along the continental borders to form the "Ring of Fire" (Fig. 33). An analogy would be to pick up a tablecloth (i.e. new emerging lava ocean floor) a foot above the surface of the center of a circular table (i.e. upper surface of the Pacific Ocean mantle), and then, immediately releasing it. Its edges would be pulled up, then it would spread (ripple) outwards as the tablecloth was allowed to come to rest on the table. If the table's circular edges were also confined by a conforming cardboard border such that the table cloth was not allowed to extend beyond the table edge (i.e. the continental edge), it would wrinkle (i.e. ocean ridges, valleys & trenches) as it spread from the center and approached the edge of the table.

In a similar manner, the new emerging lava ocean floor cascaded outwards from the bulge center of the Pacific Ocean toward land. Its primary thrust was tangentially in the same direction as the continents were flung. The lava ocean floor was cast toward its outer edges toward land as encroaching lava tsunami waves. This means that as the continents were breaking away (i.e. as the east Asian border), or whether the continents are breaking inwards towards the encroaching magma tsunami (i.e. as the Indonesian Islands above Australia and New Zealand broke to the northeast, or North and South America broke westward), the result was the same –

deep trenches was demarked along their border edges, accompanied with earthquake and volcanoes along the perimeter of the Pacific Ocean. This primarily occurred along the rim of the Pacific Ocean (i.e. Ring of Fire) since this was where the flip of the earth first manifested itself causing much of the ocean floor to bulged. As the land and emerging ocean floor was flung tangentially from the top surface of the mantle, the mantle and the core of the earth continued to rotate clockwise out from under the breaking continents (Fig. 34).

At the Pacific Ocean floor continental edges, the magma encroached in depth, where each element followed the adjacent element. Like a water tsunami, the lava tsunami reached floating land over a new, denser ocean floor and mantle, each element was no longer able to maintain the same wave pattern, but instead; the lava wave began to mount to much taller waves as they crashed toward land. As it approached the less dense floating continental land border, the lava tsunami needed to dissipate all its momentum energy. The lava tsunami waves not only mounted upwards, but also downwards. The initial impaction formed the ocean escarpment immediately followed by a trench in the border shape of western edge of PanNoah before breaking into continents, on the West Pacific Ocean, the continental masses continued to move westward away from the impact zone. The downward impaction was driven deep under the continent's border in the supposed subduction at various ranges of angles from the surface. The process that took place is like a rubber door-jam that slides along the smooth floor until it catches under the door to prevent it from swinging any further. This impaction created the upper limit of the forming the Wadati-Benioff zone. At the same time, the underlying upper mantle under the newly laid ocean floor was also torsionally conflicted in a clockwise movement against the 20° northwest direction of the PanNoah landmass – a clockwise direction along the perimeter of the Pacific Rim. As the magma tsunami came to a halt and compressed downward, it densified and compressed in front of its movement. As the lava tsunami came to a stop, it heated up and lithified resulting in further partial

melted of magma rock creating a high stress forming magma plumes with dykes to the ocean surface forming lines of volcanoes at the peaks. This author has called this triangular stress zone **'focal impaction zone"** (Fig. 35).

As the denser lava tsunami having greater momentum, greater velocity, it created greater distance behind the mounted lava tsunami, relative to the lava wake left behind. This distance formed a massive fracture zone directly behind the lava tsunami. Similarly, the physics experiment of releasing two spheres of equal diameter but different density simultaneously traveling down a ramp. The sphere with the higher density will reach the bottom of the ramp first. Likewise, the higher tsunami density will travel further during the flip of the earth further than the less dense lava traveling behind the tsunami movement. This difference in momentum due to density resulted in a spread, or difference in distance, that formed a huge chasm immediately behind this movement forming the massive fracture zone, or deep ocean trenches, directly behind the lava tsunami that became known as the Ring of Fire. This 435-mile depth fracture zone was immediately filled in by ocean water, sediment, and the pursuing lava and that had already covered the ocean floor surface. Also, magma poured out of the walls of the abyss to fill it. This fracture infilling lithified, but was less dense and remained cooler than the surrounding mantle at depth, despite the inflow of magma. This less dense fill area later became known as the Wadati-Benioff zones which extended down to 700 km (435 mi.).

Approximately 95% of all earthquakes and volcanoes have occurred along the '**Ring of Fire**' that is located along the outer rim of the Pacific Ocean. Also, if we compare the earthquakes of 'Ring of Fire' to other parts of the world, the earthquakes are, in general, not only fewer, but shallower in other parts of the world. This strongly implies that the Pacific Ocean got the brunt of the impact from the flip of the earth, compared to the rest of the earth. The depths of

the foci of these earthquakes range from 5 km to 700 km (3 mi to 440 mi.) in depth. The earthquakes have three classifications: shallow (less than 70 km, or 44 mi.), intermediate (70 to 300 km, or 44 mi. to 188 mi.), and deep (greater than 300 km, 188 mi.); ninety-percent of earthquakes usually occur above the 100 km (62 mi.) depth. There is a seismic region or band width in which these earthquakes occur in a specific direction from shallow, intermediate, to deep along the Wadati Benioff zones. These zones tend to increase in depth toward land[1] (Fig. 31).

The following are examples where earthquake zones, mostly along the Ring of Fire, that are in the direction from shallow too deep as supported by the NU Flood Theory. The Mariana Trench, the Japan Trench along all of East Asian, and the Philippine Trench, are in the direct west towards land. The Tonga and Kermadec Trenches that parallel New Zealand are also westward toward land. The Java Trench which wraps around the south side of the Indonesian Islands is directed northeast, inward toward the islands. North New Hebrides and the New Hebrides Trench between Australia and New Zealand in the north Tasman Sea, is directed northward. The Aleutian Trench, the entrance to the Arctic Ocean between Asia and Alaska, is directed northward. The South Sandwich Trench that encompasses Drakes Passage is directed westward. Puerto-Rico Trench that surrounds the Caribbean Islands is directed westward. Note in all of these cases, the direction of the Wadati-Benioff zones is in the direction that the continents or islands were moving at the time of the Flood. The only apparent exceptions to this rule are that Peru-Chile Trench and the Central American on the west side of South and Central America are directed eastward, the opposite direction that South and Central America is said to

[1] Edward J. Tarbuck & Frederick K. Lutgens, *Earth: An Introduction to Physical Geology*, copyright 2005, Pearson Education, Inc., Upper Saddle River, New Jersey 07458, ISBN 0-13-114865, pp 340.

have gone. But, if during the earth's flip, the center of the Pacific Ocean can be thought of as where the centripetal force separated the earth's elements in an east and west direction along the 20° alignment, then South America, Hawaiian Islands, and North Asia are nearly perfectly centroid as to where the deepest earthquakes occur. An analogy of this is to spin a long, clear tube partially filled with water about its center (like spin the bottle). The water will separate to the outer edges of the clear tube in opposite directions by centripetal force. In the same way when the earth's axis locked in place, the magma on the southeast portion of the Pacific Ocean collided with the incoming South and Central America and compressed downward toward the east, forming the Wadati-Benioff on the west coast of South and Central America – opposite to the Wadati-Benioff effect on Northeast Asia borders. To state the rule in a more inclusive and concise way, the direction of the Wadati-Benioff zones is followed in the direction that the new extruded lava ocean tsunami moved toward land or the direction that the PanNoah broke at the time of the Flood. Trenches were then formed perpendicular to the breaking continent's movements.

'Focal impaction zone' followed by deep trenches were not typically formed in other oceans other then the Pacific Ocean since it was where the initial location of the critical bulge occurred. The other oceans may not have been wide enough to bulge to form large enough encroaching tsunamis that subducted at the edges, given the closer proximity of continental landmasses on either side. The exception to this were the constricting masses of the island arcs, Drakes Passage, and West Indies, which pulled westward and slightly to the south where the bulging Atlantic Ocean quickly filled the gap, resulting in its trenching behind its movement with a slight shear. It was the singular momentum and displacement of the island arcs, that

exceeded the overall momentum and displacement of North and South America forming the Atlantic Ocean, that resulted in their earthquakes, volcanoes and deep trenches.

How can we possibly explain these focal impaction features occur great depth in front of the movement of lava tsunami along the Ring of Fire. This high stressed lithified area was where volcanoes formed some earthquakes as well originated. The silicate minerals weaken with high stress as elements impacted elements several hundred kilometers depth.

> Baumgardner more recently has emphasized that silicate minerals weaken not only with increasing temperature, but also – and even more dramatically – with increasing levels of stress. … He focuses attention on the fact that these laboratory studies demonstrate that silicate rocks can weaken by ten or more orders of magnitude for temperature and stress conditions that can exist inside the mantle of a planet like the earth.[1]

The importance of the above laboratory studies indicates that silicate rocks not only under high temperatures, but under high stresses, it can be quickly weakened by ten or more orders of magnitude. This was the initial conditions at the borders of breaking continents at the edges of the Pacific Ocean when the earth flipped. The 'focal impaction' hammering of the magma tsunami lava along the continental edges contributed in tear angle of the Wadati-Benioff earthquake zones to a depth of 700 km (440 mi.).

As the centripetal forces began to be reduced as the earth settled in its new rotational axis, today's axis, the upper mantle under the Pacific Ocean then began to subside and sink. The sinking of the earth would result in greater earth pressures, greater temperature, causing more

[1] Andrew A. Snelling, *Earth's Catastrophic Past – Geology, Creation & the Flood,* Vol.2, copyright 2009, Institute for Creation Research, P.O. Box 59029, Dallas, TX 75229, ISSN-13: 978-0-932766-94-6, www.icr.org, pg 693.

> - J. R. Baumgardner, 2003, Catastrophic plate tectonics: The physics behind the Genesis Flood, in Proceedings of the Fifth International Conference on Creationism, R.L. Ivey, Jr., ed., Pittsburgh, PA: Creation Science Fellowship, 113-126.

magma to be extruded to the earth's surface. More pumping action occurred resulting in more volcanoes and earthquakes that would last till nearly the 150th day of the Flood event.

The distribution of most known earthquakes and their depths are located where the greatest 'jamming' occurred on the ocean floor and land. These typical places are where mountains, overthrust and mountain bending occurred, typically not area of great plains. While any place is susceptible to earthquakes because the whole earth was affected by it flipped, the jammed areas are the most prevalent. The following general observations reflect this general principle that support the basic concepts of NU Flood Theory. Today, earthquakes and volcanoes are often found in the same general locations, especially where they are often in a linear pattern. Along the Ring of Fire, volcanoes typically have surfaced above the **Wadati-Benioff** intermediate depth earthquake zones at or near the peak of the ocean mountain ridge line. The shallow to deep Wadati-Benioff zone earthquakes are found almost exclusively along the Ring of Fire at the edge of the Pacific Ocean. This same pattern is found on the western edge of North, Central and South America are continental mountain ranges also a part of the Ring of Fire. Shallow to intermediate earthquakes are found at the inside horseshoe shape island arcs in the Mediterranean Sea – i.e. Aegean Sea. Shallow to intermediate earthquakes are found at the ends of tight, hairpin shape island arcs in the Atlantic Ocean – i.e. Puerto-Rico Trench and South Sandwich Trench. Along the mid-oceanic ridge in all the oceans of the world, almost all are exclusively shallow earthquakes. On land, earthquakes and volcanoes are much more likely to be found along the mountain ranges than on the plains. Other than the mountains along the Ring of Fire, nearly all the other mountain ranges have shallow earthquakes. The exception to this is the hairpin ends on the northwest and north east border of India along the shoulders of the Himalayan Mountains which have shallow to intermediate earthquakes that extend to the inside

of the hairpin pattern. (The Himalayan Mountains were where one of the first initial impact of the continental break-up occurred. Therefore, there is an expectation for higher stresses forming higher mountains to occur here.) If Plate Tectonic theory were true, why should the deeper earthquakes be found along the inside bend of these mountain ranges, whether on ocean or land?

Notice that nearly all the earthquakes and volcanoes that we see today are in a convergent geological area. The exception to this is the mid-oceanic ridge, which is under a diverge zone where mostly shallow earthquakes occur. Notice that whether it is the ocean floor trenches, islands, island arcs or the continental mountains, there is nearly always a piling-up of lava or a cascading of land strata where there is a delineation of earthquakes and volcanoes. Where there are hairpin shape island arcs or the bending of mountain ranges, the depth of the earthquake seems to become even more pronounced toward the inside of their bends – along the concave, compressive side. Where the trenches are deepest along the hairpin island arcs, this tends to indicate the direction that the arcs moved away perpendicular from the trench (i.e. Both Puerto-Rico Trench and South Sandwich Trench moved west and slightly south in their last movements). This supports the concept that South America was cast more in a southwest direction relative to North America. The clockwise rotation of the outer mantle translated to great momentum of the earth's mass resulted in the piling-up from both the ocean floor and the breaking continents traveling at great speed. In turn, this caused great increased stresses in the mantle as all these great masses came to a complete stop resulting in the Ring of Fire and many other areas of volcanoes and earthquakes that we see today. This tectonics activity is what the author is calling '***Sling Tectonics'*** in place of Plate Tectonics.

For the Ring of Fire, what is the relationship of volcanoes and earthquakes? Plate Tectonics says that as the plates subducted under the continents from the ocean, it formed the

Wadati-Benioff zone. It was thought that the subduction plates carried water deep into the earth allowing the rock melt at a lower melting temperature that rose between cracks to the earth's surface to form volcanoes. These volcanoes formed approximately over the intermediate depth over the upper surface of the Wadati-Benioff zone at approximate 100 km. Above this zone, above 100 km, is where 90% of the earthquakes occur.

But is this really how volcanoes formed along the Ring of Fire? When looking closely at Google Earth at the Mariana Trench location, visually it looks like the remnant of a massive, smooth, lava tsunami accompanied with multiple frozen wakes, not a subduction of massive tectonic plates a 100 km (60 mi.) depth, that had broken toward eastern coast of Asia. Also, volcanoes are found along a well delineated along ocean mountain ridge peaks for thousands of miles. They are generally located several hundred miles in the continental direction from the deep ocean trenches above intermediate earthquake zone, but there may, or may not be any direct relationship to the earthquakes or the Wadati-Benioff zone. Since volcanoes are so well delineated at the ridge peaks, perhaps we should ask the question as to what is the relationship do these volcanoes have to their ocean ridge peaks? During the flip of the earth, the land-bound lava tsunami had increased in maximum height as it reached the continental edges and lithified (turned back to rock) as the lava met great resistance, creating greater pressures within the mounting tsunami. While some of the lava tsunami met land and 'subimpacted' downward toward the upper mantle to form the Wadati-Benioff zone, much of the tsunami and its wake became offshore frozen waves of basalt ocean rock with trailing deep trenches. In time, the core deep inside the lithified tsunami decompressed to become magma chambers near the Moho boundary, or above, where the pressure was the greatest under the lava mountain ridge peaks. It is possible that the magma chambers are fed by magma through magma dikes from the

decompressing of the Wadati-Benioff zone. While most of the remnant lava tsunami remained rock, a portion of the less dense magma, or its fractional magma part, melted and eventually found its way to the surface at the mountain ridge weakest location, its peaks, to form a delineation of volcanoes. These volcanic sources are not the great plumes of the "fountains of the deep" that came from the deep mantle transition zone, but it certainly has created very prominent volcanoes of our day since the Flood. This better explains the locations of the volcanoes along the Ring of Fire than the Plate Tectonic theory.

At the Pacific Ocean floor edges, the lava tsunami waves encroached the approached broken floating continental fragments, now islands, such that the lava waves went under and around these break-away islands. These islands became floating obstruction to the encroaching lava waves as they flowed around these fragments. Thus, the continental land mass also created a back-up of lava waves hundreds of miles from where it came from -- the source was the bulging center of the Pacific Ocean. The encroachment of the new islands again resulted in a bowing down of the ocean floor tsunami waves in front of the islands fragments to form 'margin jams' - 'focal impaction', not subduction. This, in turn, produced even more surrounding volcanic islands in an arc pattern called ***island arcs***. These arcs are formed similar to the crescent debris formed during a rainstorm just before the water drains into a street storm inlet.

If the assumption of 'focal impaction' is true for the NU Upheaval Theory, then the impaction is due to the momentum of the mountain range, or escarpment (scarp) and therefore; must be located in front of its movement as it came to a sudden stop. The Wadati-Benioff zones in either theory is claimed to be a real phenomenon resulting in earthquakes and volcanoes that are nearly all on the front side of the trench along the Ring of Fire. Both theories should be weighed by which best meets the facts.

Are there similar tectonic patterns elsewhere in our solar system? Yes, our own Moon has similar earthquake patterns that line up with lunar scarps.

> Four of the Apollo missions left seismometers on the Moon. These functioned for eight years and sent back data on thousands of moonquakes. Most of the quakes were the result of gravitational effects, the Sun's heat, or when human-built objects were crashed into the lunar surface (to calibrate the seismometers). However, dozens of these moonquakes do not fit these explanations. The unexplained quakes seem to originate from *inside* the Moon. For 40 years, these events remained mysterious and poorly-understood. Earlier this year (2019), a study published in *Nature Geoscience*[1] re-examined these quakes. Using data from moon seismometers and software developed for analyzing quakes on Earth, these researchers calculated that the moonquakes originated within scarps (narrow faults on the Moon's surface) What does this mean? Thomas Watters off the Smithsonian Institution (and co-author of the study) explained: *"That means, for all intents and purposes, the moon is tectonically active… To me, that's amazing result."* .[2]

A **scarp**, or **escarpment**, is a line of cliffs formed by the faulting or fracturing of the earth's (or moon's) crust. What would have caused both the lunar scarps and the long, linear pattern of earthquakes along these scarps? Most geoscientist would agree that Plate Tectonics only exist on the earth and nowhere else in our solar system, including our moon. (This fact is not well explained by Plate Tectonic advocates.) There cannot be a good case made for a lunar plate tectonics on the moon since there are no comparable features as the mid-oceanic ridge and deep subduction trenches as have defined Plate Tectonics on earth. Also, the moon does not have a continental crust that independently floats over a lunar mantle similar to the earth. The author believes that for both the lunar scarps and the linear pattern to be present together, the moon must have also flipped, similar to the earth. Like the earth, magma must have spewed to the moon's surface from deep lunar plumes during the earth's Flood event. The lunar lava, or its

[1] Search for the Truth, Volume 12, Number 4, 2019,
- https://www.nature.com/articles/s41561-019-0362-2

[2] Search for the Truth, Volume 12, Number 4, 2019,

outer sphere, would then be cast over its surface in waves to form lunar lava scarps. As the lava was cast over the lunar surface, its waves came to a stop as it met frictional surface resistance with the gravity of the moon. As the lava came to a stop, it piled up as lunar scarps, while at the same time, it densified the lava mass in front of its thrust. Its compressive, downward force due the huge momentum force behind it resulted in putting-on-the-breaks, similar to a door-jam sliding for a short distance before finally catching and stopping a swinging door. This downward jamming of lava into the weakened lunar surface results in this downward pattern of "Focal Impaction" that results in today's lunar-quakes along the scarp-line. The lava scarps would later cool to become solid lunar basalt rock.

In time, the cooled basalt rock would not be able to retain its density equilibrium balance over a long period of time. As the denser basalt rock becomes less dense equilibrium state over time, it adjusts by cracking or expanding creating moonquakes, similar to cracking ice or earthquakes.

Whether its earthquakes or moonquakes, it is not the height of the mountain ranges, or ocean ridges on earth or the scarps on the moon that in themselves caused their quakes. Instead, it is what caused the formation of the mountain ranges, ocean ridges and the scarps in the first place. It was the result of the flip of the Earth/Moon axis that resulted in their momentum that resulted in a 'door jamming' effect of their upper lava (i.e. now crust) surface. Therefore, the greater the mountains that were cast, the greater their moonquakes or earthquakes. Again, this tectonics activity, Moon or Earth (or perhaps other planetoid in our solar system), is what this author is calling '***Sling Tectonics***.'

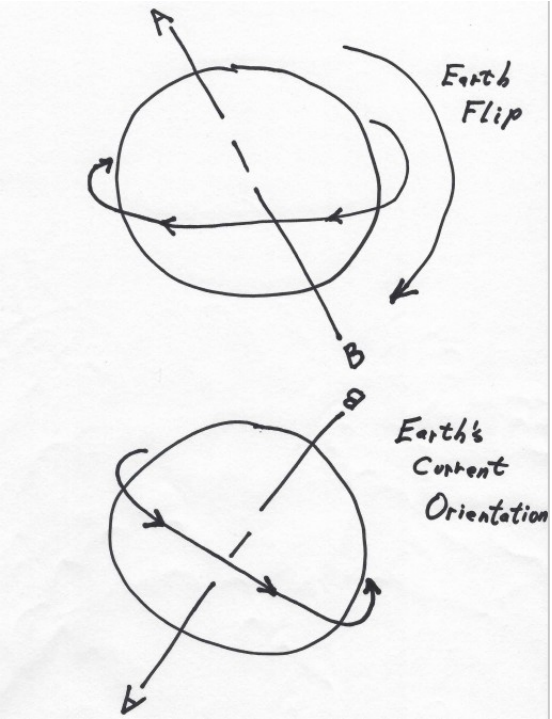


Fig. No. 32

Earth Flip

It is the Earth flip that is described by Noah's Upheaval Flood Theory that describes nearly all the major geological features of the earth today.

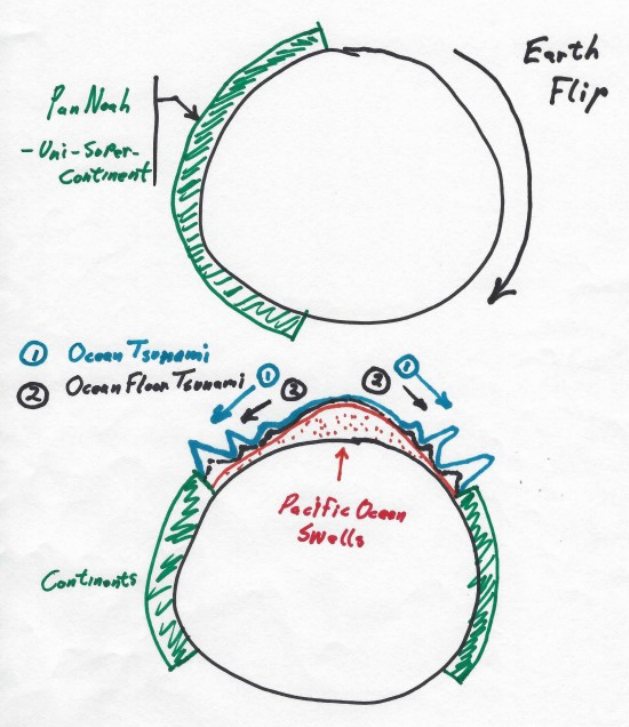


Fig. No. 33

PanNoah Breaks Up

The earth flipped experiencing centrifugal force that swelled the Pacific Ocean resulting in magma spewing from superplumes filling the ocean floor. PanNoah rotated across the Southwestern Pacific Ocean then began breaking up into continents and islands. Both lava and ocean water tsunamis rushed to the continental edges.

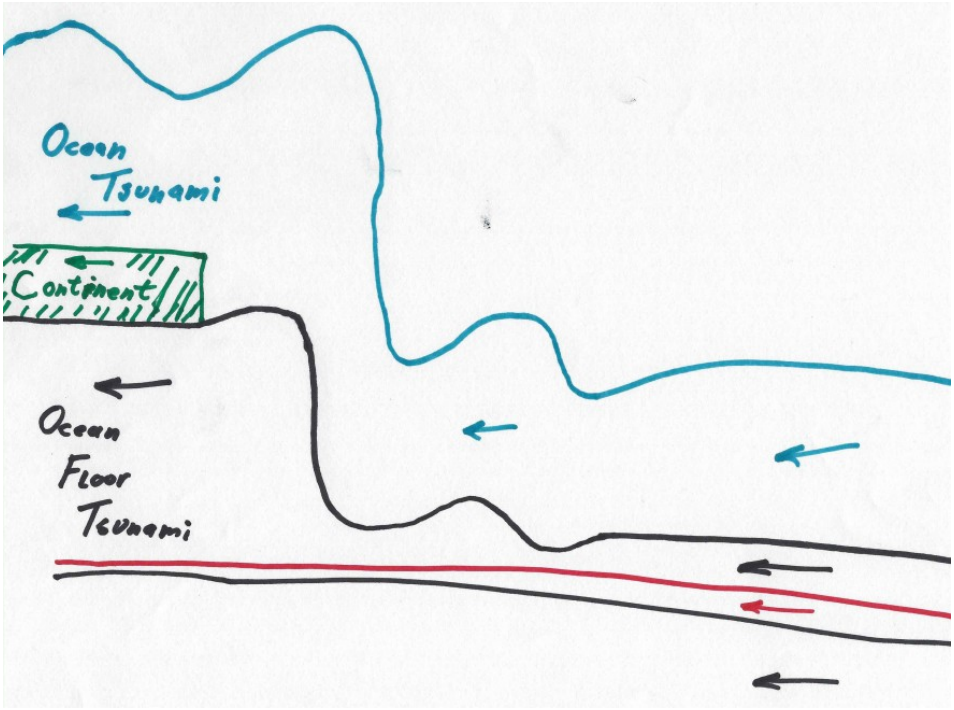


Fig. No. 34

Ocean Floor (Lava) Tsunami

As the breaking continents and island came to a stop and both lava and ocean water tsunamis rush to their continental edges, the lava tsunami also came to a stop. This process happened similar to a "door stop" sliding across the floor for a distance before "jamming" to stop the door.

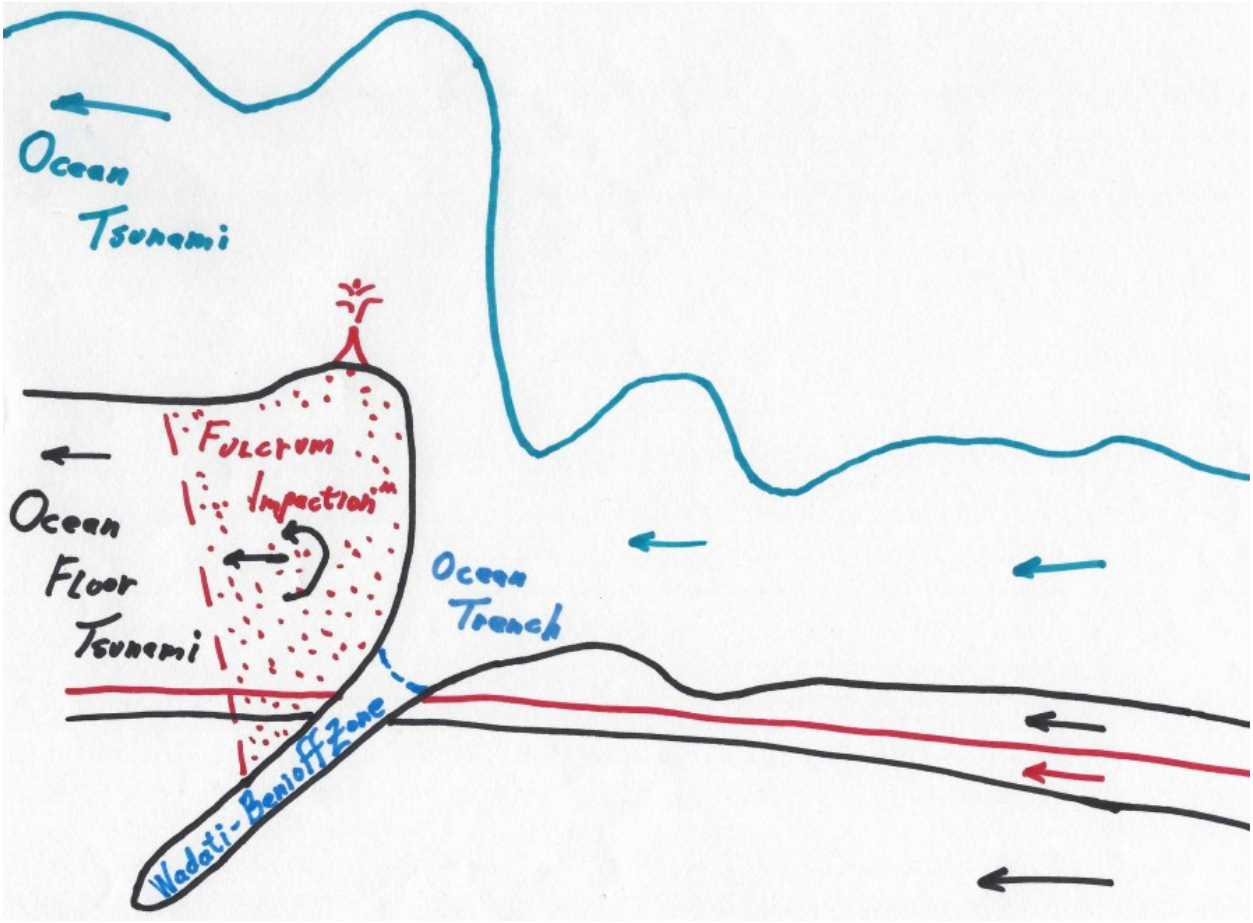


Fig. No. 35

Wadati -Benioff Zone Formed

As the lava tsunami came to a stop, similar to a "door stop" slides across the floor for a distance before "jamming" to stop the door, it formed a "Focal Impaction Zone" (as named by author) just above what will become the Wadati-Benioff Zone. This impaction created much heat and dewatering densify this triangular zone. Volcanoes formed above the "Focal Impaction Zone" as magma dykes reached to the surface along the lava tsunami escarpment peaks. This denser heavier mass translated into greater momentum, traveling slightly farther then the less densified ocean mass behind its movement. This difference in distance and slight rotation formed a fracture, or abyss, behind the movement of the lava tsunami forming today's trenches and accompanying Wadati-Benioff Zone.

XIII. Stratification & Geological Column

Dr. R.J. Bailey and D.G. Smith could shake the foundations of stratigraphy. They have come up with a new approach of analyzing the strata different from the traditional methods and assumptions of Global Boundary Section and Point (GSSP) and Global Standard Stratigraphic Age (GSSA) that has dominated geology. They have incorporated quantitative method to evaluate the rock record to explain sedimentary layering called the Layer Thickness Inventory (LTI). What they determined was that based on their test methods, that the Geological Column regardless how thick or thin the strata being studied, the "**geometrically fractal**" concept "applies to most stratigraphic data series regardless of age, facies and net rate of accumulations". The direct implications of this is that the incompleteness or the said missing sections of the supposed deep time is simply a "gap in the record" that is not exceptional when considering it in the context of its fractional properties whether on a micro scale or a macro scale. Both researchers have put into question uniformitarian stratigraphy practices and interpretations of continuous deposition, continuity, gaps in stratum (Walther's Law), rates of accumulation, and rocks that are said to represent eons of history. With regards to high modern rates of deposition rates, geologists speak of, "…these rates should average *hundreds of kilometres* in thickness, not the ˜2 km estimated today". [1]

> …as Bailey and Smith note, if "it is not possible to determine whether currently observable sedimentary processes…are of the kind that will provide records in the future…", then neither can we know if they are the ones operating in the past and represented by the rock record. If correct, then the **methodological**

---

[1] *Journal of Creation*, Vol. 30(1), 2016, *Changing paradigms in stratigraphy-"a quite different way of analyzing the record"*, by John K. Reed, ISSN 1036-2916, p. 83-88.

- Bailey, R.J. and Smith., Scaling in stratigraphic data series: implications for practical stratigraphy, *First Break* **10**:57-66, 2010.
- Smith, D.G., Bailey, R.J., Burgess, P. and Fraser, A. (Eds.), *Strata and Time,* Geological Society, London, Special Publication, 2015.

> **uniformitarianism** that restricts interpretation of past processes to the reservoir of those observed in the present **is no longer tenable**.[1] (emphasis add)

The concept stratigraphic "**geometrically fractal**" must also be true for the matching pattern rock structure of six megasequences of strata that are stacked on top of each other that make up the said Geological Column that is found in the Grand Canyon and over the whole globe. Many megasequences are composed of a sandstone layer on the bottom, followed by a layer of shale, and then finally limestone on top. Each megasequence is thought to represent one depositional interval. Megasequences are not constructed based on the fossil record but rather on common erosional boundaries across the continents. Because of this, they have become the preferred method of studying sedimentary deposits.[2]

There is debate among creation scientists as to the accuracy of the standard interpretation of the Geological Column. Some creation scientists believe that the geological column is a straight forward sequence record of strata laid down mostly by the Flood event. They typically have assigned days, instead of millions of years, to the stratum. Other creationists take a Flood view that more closely follows the Taz Walker Biblical geological model. Walker has proposed that the stratum arrangement should more directly relate to the Genesis Flood event by assigning stages with phases. The two primary Flood stages he has assigned are the Inundatory and the Recessive Stages, or respectively, the rise and fall stages of the Floodwaters. These stages are

---

[1] *Journal of Creation*, Vol. 30(1), 2016, *Changing paradigms in stratigraphy-"a quite different way of analyzing the record"*, by John K. Reed, ISSN 1036-2916, p. 83-88.
- Bailey, R.J. and Smith., Scaling in stratigraphic data series: implications for practical stratigraphy, *First Break* **10**:57-66, 2010.
- Smith, D.G., Bailey, R.J., Burgess, P. and Fraser, A. (Eds.), *Strata and Time,* Geological Society, London, Special Publication, 2015.

[2] Timothy Clarey, *CARVED IN STONE, Geological Evidence of the Worldwide Flood,* (first printing March 2020), Institute for Creation Research, P.O. Box 59029, Dallas, TX 75229, ISBN 978-1-946246-25-7, pg. 313-314.

broken down into the Eruptive, Ascending, Zenethic, Abative, and Dispersive Phases.[3] While both are true to a degree, both creation models have the implied assumption that each stratum was laid down at one time and simply stacked like pancakes into a chronological order by the Flood event. While both sides have discussions of the Floodwaters have taken debris hundreds of miles away from the original source, it is missing the emphasis that all the debris has been moved hundreds, if not thousands of miles, from their sources with little point of reference. Neither the straight forward sequence view or Walker's view fully takes into primary consideration that the sediment layers may have come about by a process of "sorting and resorting" multiple times and then finally being pick-up and dropped off hundreds of miles away, multiple times throughout the Flood event as the Floodwaters flowed from the north to south (in one direction) during the initial stage leaving majority of its deposition.

The Geological Column model should be turned on its head in view of a new paradigm view of "geometric fractal" and "sorting and resorting". The actual Geological Column is very non-linear. Some agreement exists that the geological column does seem to be divided into legitimate general divisions of fossil type and marine life which is placed on the bottom; yet the upper strata divisions still contain marine life as well as land mammal fossils. Geologist and this author agree that the sedimentary record is a record of the 'final' strata placement. But it is hard to say that the order of strata is also the order of the age of rock or even strata that demonstrates the stages of the Flood! The problem arises because at least six megasequences, and some of the strata included in the megasequences are so very thin and spread out over a continent, or multiple continents. Some of the strata are so pure of sand, salt, or limestone. that they must

[3] *Journal of Creation*, Vol. 24(2), 2010, *The geological column is a general Flood order with many exceptions*, by Michael J. Oard, ISSN 1036-2916, p. 79.

have come from long distances, being highly sorted, to end up in their final pure condition and destination.

This assumes that either the source rock was nearly pure at its initial state of creation, or the sediment was sorted by the Flood process to near purity. Due to the extreme chaotic, destructive nature of the Flood, should there be an expectation that the initial pure source to remain pure during the entire chaotic Flood event? This author assumes that much of pure rock was formed by the latter assumption - by sorting. This implies that there was tremendous sorting and resorting, hundreds of times over hundreds of miles before the strata were finally layered. This can only mean that the sediment was very quickly laid down horizontally, picked up, and laid down again multiple times, sorting out the finer grains from the more granular sediment as multiple tsunami mud sheetflows from primarily the north – not initially to and fro from any direction. The spreading out of the strata over thousands of square miles says that the magasequenses originated from mammoth sheetflows that spread over thousands of square miles over multiple continents. The multiple strata were sorted and resorted, over vast areas by at least six megasequenses. Therefore, how is it possible for the Geologic Column to be in the correct order of the entire Flood event when the stratum was lay down by a sorting/resorting magasequense process?

To illustrate this unconventional view or sorting/resorting: if a farmer tills the ground, is the ground on top the older soil, or is the soil turned under the older– or neither? If you sort a data base by last names, then resort the data base by first names, how likely are we to get the same sequential order of data? The same is true of the Geological Column philosophy which assumes that the newer rock overlays the older rock. The six magaseqences that make up the entire Geological Column are themselves made up of highly sorted rock material.

The assumptions of the Geological Column concept verse the assumptions of six magaseqences are each very different philosophical ways of thinking how the vast sediment material was sorted. The first type of sorting is by assumed rock age and fossil type, while the other is simply a sorting function by sediment gradation size. The odds that both methods exactly correlate like the data base illustration are slim to none. Therefore, actual geological cores of megasequences field data should first be considered, not in the philosophical belief of newer rock over older rock in the hypothetical existence of the Geological Column.

The mechanism of sorting is what this author refers to as ***Tsunami Flood Sheetflows (or Dry Waves)*** because they were initially caused by the flip of the earth and the waves most likely extended more than halfway around the circumference of the earth. The distance between waves was most likely a quarter to a half of the circumference of the earth. At its highest elevations, during the peak Flood period, it would have certainly been taller than today's mountains, if not much taller. The high ground, at its lowest tsunami elevations, may have been exposed during the Mesozoic era. This allowed only the adult amphibians and dinosaurs to survive the first onslaught of tsunami waves leaving their eggs and fossilized tracks on the uphill side to escape to higher ground. Like all the other creatures, they would eventually be overcome by the Flood and die, later to be buried and fossilized at higher stratum.

Dr. John Baumgardner, a charter member and proponent of Catastrophic Plate Tectonics, has published to possibility of an earth flipped in order to explain why there are sharp contacts between multiple sedimentary layers that cover every continent of the earth:

> A wobble or flip-flop of this huge gyroscope (earth) would generate large-scale, directional currents of water over the continents that were able to transport and deposit the vast quantity of sediments seen in stratigraphic record. A different

current direction would suddenly dominate in a particular location with a different sediment source. [1]

All of these concepts related to sedimentology gives persuasion to an earth flipped that occurred during the Genesis Flood.

XIV. Flood Boundaries

One of the greatest debates among Young Earth Creationist was where were the lower and upper limits of the Flood boundary? The lower limits is the boundary between of the Pre-Flood strata and Flood strata where the strata began. The upper limits is the boundary where the Flood strata ended and the erosion runoff strata phase began. The determination of the upper limit is far more controversial than the lower limit.

In the NU Flood theory, the lower limit is the Great Discontinuity that divides the Pre-Cambrian rock from the Cambrian rock above it. Most Creationist agrees with this lower limit. NU Flood Theory contends that the discontinuity occurred when all the strata, uni-body block, was laid down the first hours of the Flood and PanNoah came to a stop after being flung around the South Pacific. This whole uni-body block of strata, miles in depth, was "a body in motion that wished to stay in motion" which eroded everything in its path forming an underbelly discontinuity slide plane. All Pre-Flood hills and mountains, if they ever existed, were eroded flat across all the continents along this plane. Any crushing upward of basement rock was sheared flat. This means that the initial surface of the Pre-Flood was totally washed away in the Flood, and therefore; its make-up can never be determined. But the Pre-Flood strata boundary,

[1] Dr. John D. Morris, *The Global Flood, Unlocking Earth's Geologic History,* copyright 2012, first printing, Creation Research, P.O. Box 59029, Dallas, TX 75229, *ISBN: 978-1-935587-12-5*, Library of Congress Catalog Number: 2012949341, *pp.* 122.

the Great Discontinuity, that was greatly, eroded can easily be seen in places like the near bottom strata of the Grand Canyon. The Pre-Cambrian rock is often tilted and highly fractured since it was crushed in the process of PanNoah breaking up and coming to a stop.

The upper limit is approximately the last strata that remains on the highest mountains. The reason for this is that all the major layers were laid down as horizontal strata like a layers of pancake immediately after the start of the Flood. This was shortly followed by continents coming to a stop resulting in the upward thrust of these upper surface layers to form all the current cascaded mountain ranges of the world. After months, the water would exceed the heights of all the mountains, then drain off the earth into the oceans and back into the oceans and the "fountains of the deep." The Floodwaters would first drain from the top mountains and eventually flow to lower elevations where most of the erosion would occur and finally reside. The eroded rock from the ridges of the mountains settled to become strata in the valleys. The mountains would have had the least time for the Floodwaters to erode them with the least accumulation of erosion. Therefore, the mountains should be the most reliable indicator while the valleys would be the least reliable indicator as to where the upper limits should be. The mountains should contain within them all the final strata that would have been laid down level initially before they were uplifted. However, the Floodwater then overflowed the tops of these folded mountains, shearing off their peak and forming planations. It would be unknown what the actual top stratum was that eroded from the peaks of these mountains, given the planation erosion, but their existing top strata should give a minimum strata identification for the upper limits of the Flood with regard to the said geological column. Based on the following field data, the minimum upper limits of the Flood were the Plio-Pleistocene period and even to the present relative to the Geological Column.

> Our compilation of mountains throughout the world shows that a major phase of uplift occurred in the Plio-Pleistocene.[1] …Nevertheless there does seem to have been a major pulse of uplift in the Pliocene extending into the Pleistocene and even to the present.[2]

XV. Metamorphic Rock Mystery

What processes formed the metamorphic rocks that made up the shields in plains and the core rock in mountain ranges? How is metamorphic rock formed in the first place? The most recognized metamorphic processes are contact or thermal metamorphism, hydrothermal metamorphism, mountain building, and shock metamorphism. *Thermal metamorphism* occurs when there is a rise in temperature of the host rock surrounding the igneous intrusion. *Hydrothermal metamorphism* occurs when ion-rich water circulates through the host rock altering its chemical properties. *Mountain building metamorphism* occurs when massive amounts of sediment are subject to high pressure and temperature, typically thought to exist deep within the earth – and not horizontal forces.[3] *Shock metamorphism* is typically thought to be the direct result of high-velocity projectiles that impact the earth such as comets and asteroids.[4]

The NU Flood Theory does *not* take the popular position that nearly all the metamorphic rock formed five miles to seventy miles deep within the earth. If metamorphic rock did not form

---

[1] Cliff Ollier and Colin Pain, The Origin of Mountains, Routledge, London, copyright 2000, ISBN 0-415-19889-5 (hbk), pg. 303

[2] Cliff Ollier and Colin Pain, The Origin of Mountains, Routledge, London, copyright 2000, ISBN 0-415-19889-5 (hbk), pg. 303

[3] Edward J. Tarbuck & Frederick K. Lutgens, *Earth: An Introduction to Physical Geology*, copyright 2005, Pearson Education, Inc., Upper Saddle River, New Jersey 07458, ISBN 0-13-114865, pp 245.

[4] Edward J. Tarbuck & Frederick K. Lutgens, *Earth: An Introduction to Physical Geology*, copyright 2005, Pearson Education, Inc., Upper Saddle River, New Jersey 07458, ISBN 0-13-114865, pp 266.

deep in the earth, how did it form? ***All of the above four options! Each of these mechanisms was present during the Flood event. But it started by impact! Not so much due to the direct impact of meteorites striking the earth itself, but mostly by the momentum PanNoah being flung clockwise around the South Pacific when the earth flipped.*** The earth flipped due to the gravitational influence of the 'asteroids storm' that blasted through our solar system - perhaps in waves. The earth is currently rotating 1,000 miles per hour at the equator. A flip in the axis of the earth during the first days of the Flood caused a rapid change in the momentum of every sedimentary particle of the earth to slam into each other. This caused sudden, massive, horizontal shifts, causing huge increases in pressures and temperatures near the earth's surface. This initially resulted in much rock changing to magma that exploded to the surface as igneous plumes. Both PanNoah and the ocean floor (pre-Flood and post Flood) rotated clockwise. PanNoah continental sheet mass would fluctuate applying alternating tension and compression at its upper and lower boundaries. As PanNoah rotated clockwise over the Pacific Ocean floor, laying sediment strata over its surface, and started to slowdown, it began to hijack and break apart. The whole uni-block of new overburdened saturated sediment, now known as the Geological Column, began to be flung as a unit body over the basement pre-Cambrian rock over all of PanNoah. The very upper portion of this unit-body sediment cascaded as a sediment tsunami in the direction that the continents broke apart. It would not cease cascading until the mountains had cascaded high enough and deep enough to reach equal counter resistance equilibrium. At the same time, the Floodwaters initially came from the north relative to the final positions of the continents. As the sediment mud-flow tsunamis came to a relative quick stop, it formed mountain ranges at the top surface of the miles of sediment that had shifted over a breaking continent. As the breaking continents and the new overburdened sediment came to a stop, the top surface of the continents sheared and the sediment cascaded to form semi-sheet rock

that metamorphed and overthrust in the mountain regions. This massive horizontal compression resulted in massive increase in temperature and pressure. Some of the core rock of the mountains would have turned to solid granite rock almost immediately, while others might have taken more time to turn to rock.

Metamorphism of the rock took place where the heat and the pressure of the compressed earth were the greatest. This was most profound at the core of all the major mountains ranges of the world. Given that the compressed sediment was saturated by the Floodwater and compressed over the mountain region, the sedimentary rock changed to metamorphic rock as water exploded through each sedimentary particle at near supersonic speeds. As the uni-body block of sedimentary cascaded and compressed, it formed metamorphic rock 'thin sheet' as was the formation of the Appalachian Mountains which were thrust a hundred plus miles over sedimentary rock that remains unchanged.

In a similar manner, the plains made up of metamorphic shields were formed when thousands of feet of overburdened sediment came to a stop when breaking continents collided with adjacent sedimentary rock to form metamorphic rock. Much of the top portion of the overburdened sediment which was formerly over many of the plains, had cascaded in the direction of the breaking continent to form the tallest mountains ranges. This underlying sediment was initially not quickly able to respond by bulging-up during the earth flip due to its own overburden, and therefore metamorphosed. This created shield formations such as the Canadian Shields, making the metamorphic rock so prevalent at the earth's surface.

Metamorphic rock over sedimentary rock is not only unique to the Appalachian Mountains, it is also true for this configuration in Moine, Scotland, UK. The metamorphism of the overlying rock due to extreme heat and pressure, should have affected the underlying rock, but has not.

> Northwest Scotland possesses a wide range of overthrusts….Moine illustrates uphill movement (about 15°), and shows metamorphic rock overlying unmetamorphosed strata. .[1]

To make the case as to the possibility of the core of the mountains compressed with such enormous heat and the pressure, they metamorphed into granite rock when they cascaded, consider the Yucatan meteorite impact that many uniformitarian scientists have said to have killed all the dinosaurs. NOVA documentation movie script called, *The Day the Dinosaurs Died,* gives their interpretation of what happened when the Yucantan meteorite hit.[2] When this

[1] *Journal of Creation*, Neutrinos – the not-so-neutral particles, by Emil Silvestru, Volume 24(3) 2010, ISSN 1036-2916, pg 13.
- The strange case of solar flares and radioactive elements, 23 August 2010, news.stanford,edu/news/2010/august/sun-082310.html, 7 September 2010.

[2] *The Day the Dinosaurs Died - Movie Script*, Springfield! Springfield!, Movie & TV Scripts, Screencaps & Framegrabs, The Simpsons (see dialogue below)

https://www.springfieldspringfield.co.uk/movie_script.php?movie=the-day-the-dinosaurs-died

> This is actually melted basement rock, melted granite, and it actually takes amazing pressures to do that, and amazing pressures to melt the rock. This is... So, I've got a piece of what would be considered, sort of, normal granite, if you will - the kind that you might put on your counter-top, and that's why we use it, cos it's nice and hard. - I mean, it... Right? - Pretty solid. But this... Yeah, exactly. This stuff has actually seen shock of an incredible level, so think of it as pressure waves moving down through the granite, like lots and lots of little earthquakes. And what it's done to it is, all the way down at the scale of a crystal, - is it's actually deformed it... - Mm-hmm. So that the final granite... can be broken. - It just crumbled up. That's... that's amazing. - Yeah. Oh, wow. Just such incredible, amazing forces at work here. This whole event, it's... I'm still finding it difficult. Well, even as a geophysicist, where we study this for a living, it's really hard to wrap our brains around the enormity of the pressures involved, and the enormity of the destruction - that happens in the middle of an impact, and so quickly. - Mm-hm. This all happened in less than ten minutes. It's becoming clear just how mind-bogglingly huge the Yucatan impact really was.

meteorite hit, its impact was such that it created pressure waves, like little earthquakes, all the way down to the scale of a crystal to deform it to form granite rock. This all happened in less than ten seconds.

Noah's Upheaval Flood Theory contends that a similar cataclysmic event with the flip of the earth resulting in multiple sheets of sediment cascaded over each other forming impact granite in the core of mountain ranges all over the world. This impact would not have been from the initial waves of asteroid impact that initiated the Flood, but it came about as PanNoah had been flung clockwise about the South Pacific and began to slow down, and continents ripping apart. This event may have only taken hours for all the mountain ranges to form.

Therefore, given that the granite rock all over the earth was formed by sudden impact in coming to a stop, high pressure and high temperature, should granite rock only be considered igneous rock? Considering the Noah's Upheaval Flood Theory, where continents have collided into each other and mountains cascaded into each other, we find granite rock on the continental shields and in the core of mountains. It is also found in the Yucatan meteorite impact zone. These rocks must have been formed by a metamorphic process as just described. Therefore, perhaps granite rock should, in many cases, be reclassified as metamorphic rock, as well as igneous rock.

XVI. New Ocean Floor Discoveries!

If the NU Upheaval Theory came from "fountains of the deep" in the form of plumes and volcanoes, there should be thousands of volcanoes in every ocean of the world. In *LiveScience*, Becky Oskin, science writer, in article *Scientists Discover Thousands Of Uncharted Mountains*

Hidden Beneath The Sea, discussed extinct volcanic seamounts and ocean mountain ridges discovered by more sophisticated satellites - Jason-1 and Cryosat-2. The satellites data of these two satellites were fed into the gravity models that better determined what the topography of the ocean floor looks like. The resolution of the ocean floor is two times more accurate, while the coastal areas were four times more accurate than previously known.

The new-found information also gives validity to the NU Flood Theory. Given the added number of volcanoes found gives credibility that much of the ocean floor magma came from volcanic plumes, not just from the mid-oceanic ridge. It verifies that the clockwise rotation of the continents and magma ocean floors formed compression ridges and resulted in thousands of expulsions of magma under the ocean floors, which also resulted in seamount volcanoes. The compression ridges created the abyssal hills that cover 30 percent of the earth's surface – approximately the same percentage area as the earth's landmass. It is this author's prediction that the ridges and valleys should have formed either transverse to the direction of the force, or in the direction of the movement and break-up of the continents. It seems to have the appearance of wrinkles as a folded garment over its foundation. The Oskin article verifies that the fractures extend from continent to continent, but was covered by sediment that had drained off the continents – most likely the post-Flood sediment runoff.

> A new topographic map of Earth's mysterious ocean floor reveals thousands of towering volcanoes, hidden gashes where supercontinents ripped apart and other never-before-seen features once veiled by miles of water and thick sediment.[1]

[1] *Scientists Discover Thousands Of Uncharted Mountains Hidden Beneath The Sea* - LiveScience | By Becky Oskin, Posted: 10/04/2014 9:03 am EDT Updated: 10/04/2014 9:59 am EDT

http://www.huffingtonpost.com/2014/10/04/thousands-sea-mountains-discovered_n_5929880.html?ncid=txtlnkusaolp00000592

and,

The world's volcano count jumped tremendously thanks to the new map. The number of seamounts soared from around 5,000 to about 20,000, Sandwell said. Seamounts are small, conical volcanoes that are usually inactive or extinct. In the deep ocean, tall seamounts attract a riot of marine life. The map captures all seamounts more than 0.9 miles (1.5 kilometers) tall.

Some of the new seamounts appear in linear chains, but many do not. That suggests the volcanoes did not erupt above a mantle plume, a blob of hot rock that rises from the deep mantle (the layer under the crust). Some scientists think mantle plumes don't exist, but, as with climate change, the majority of researchers agree on the concept but argue about the details.[1]

and,

For the first time, the global seafloor topography captures the abyssal hills, the most common surface feature on Earth, the study reports. While the secrets of the origin are still debated, scientists think a combination of faulting and volcanism at spreading ridges creates the hills. The corrugated ridges and valleys cover up to 30 percent of Earth's surface, by some estimates. "They're the most common landform on the planet, and I'm always amazed that people have never heard of them," Sandwell said.

Along coastlines, the data uncovered faults and fractures buried under thick piles of mud and sand pouring off the continents.[2]

and further,

"The spreading ridge opened the gulf about 150 million years, when the Yucatan Peninsula pivoted counterclockwise from North America".[3]

---

1 *Scientists Discover Thousands Of Uncharted Mountains Hidden Beneath The Sea*

http://www.huffingtonpost.com/2014/10/04/thousands-sea-mountains-discovered_n_5929880.html?ncid=txtlnkusaolp00000592

2 *Scientists Discover Thousands Of Uncharted Mountains Hidden Beneath The Sea*

http://www.huffingtonpost.com/2014/10/04/thousands-sea-mountains-discovered_n_5929880.html?ncid=txtlnkusaolp00000592

and,

> Most of the new ridges, faults and volcanoes were undiscovered because 80 percent of the ocean floor has never been charted by ships. The new topography will improve depth estimates in much of the ocean, the researchers said.[1]

This strongly implies that there are many volcanoes yet to be discovered, perhaps many thousands more, under the ocean floor crust that have not poked to the surface. Given the great number of volcanoes discovered and yet to be discovered, gives strong evident that these may very well have been the direct result of "fountains of the deep" where both magma and the Floodwaters poured out of on the first day of the Flood. This article also reminds us that there is still so much more to discover about our own planet – especially when it comes to the ocean floors.

XVII. Rock Layers Across Continents and Transcontinental Areas

If the Floodwaters was sheetflowed across the entire PanNoah, we should see much evidence of these layers of similar rock type and features over vast continents and transcontinental areas. In fact, this is exactly what we observe across United States and across the entire world. The uniformitarians observe the same evidence, but attribute similar rock strata to long continental rivers flowing millions of years and depositing these strata. This is not

---

[3] *Scientists Discover Thousands Of Uncharted Mountains Hidden Beneath The Sea* http://www.huffingtonpost.com/2014/10/04/thousands-sea-mountains-discovered_n_5929880.html?ncid=txtlnkusaolp00000592

[1] *Scientists Discover Thousands Of Uncharted Mountains Hidden Beneath The Sea* http://www.huffingtonpost.com/2014/10/04/thousands-sea-mountains-discovered_n_5929880.html?ncid=txtlnkusaolp00000592

logical since the identified sedimentary layers are so vast and yet relatively thin with no river channel erosion anywhere. Since rivers widths do not cover vast continents, therefore; the uniformitarian concept should be dismissed. There are four sheetflow example evidences given for the Floodwater strata: 1. Megasequences, 2. Same strata over multiple continents, 3. Mount St. Helens, and 4. Rapid sedimentation experiment.

1. Megasequences

Six megasequences, from the bottom to the top of the Geological Column are Sauk, Tippecanoe, Kaskaskia, Absaroka, Zuni, and the Tejas Megasequences, make up nearly all the sediment, covering all the continents of the world at significant depths. These megasequences which must have flowed from Canada into North America, due to their placement at depth based on hundreds of drill holes. These megasequences can easily be seen in the Grand Canyon.

In a December 2014 in the *Acts & Facts* article called *Fountains of the Deep*, Dr. Tim Clarey with Institute for Creation Research, noted that after examining over 500 stratigraphic columns, he discovered that there were potentially six to seven megasequences across North America that gave evidence of a global Flood [1] (see Fig. 37). From these column data, the thicknesses and the extent of the individual rock types could be determined. Computer maps were developed to show a stratigraphy or the multiple layers of megasequence flowing from north to south. The map shows the progression of the six **megasequences as coming from the north** over Canada into United States.

---

[1] Acts & Facts, Institute for Creation Research, *Fountains of the Deep,* by Dr. Tim Clarey, Ph.d,. Vol. 43, No. 12, December 2014, pg.
- Morris, J. D. 2012, *The Global Flood: Unlocking Earth'Geologic History*, Dallas, TX: Institute for Creation Research.

In the February 2019 article in Acts & Facts called, *A Rock-Based Global Sea Level*, by Dr. Tim Clarey, noted that ICR had compiled over 1,500 stratigraphic columns across North and South America and Africa. [1] This data was tabulated in Table 1 of the article (Fig. 36). The evidence shows "…a progressive flood event that began slowly in the Sauk Megasequence, peaked in the Zuni and receded in the Tejas." This was graphically shown in Clarey's article, Figure 2 (see Fig. 36 below).

In the December 2019 article in *Acts & Facts* called, *A Rock-Based Global Sea Level*, by Dr. Tim Clarey, noted that ICR had compiled over 499 stratigraphic columns across Europe. [2] This was graphically shown in Clarey's article, Figure 2 (see Fig. 38 below). Again, the same pattern was present for Europe as was for the other three continents previously investigated – North America, South America and Africa. Similar to North America, the direction that the Flood came from was from the northwest (from the article's Figure 2 illustrations) as was predicted by the NU Flood Theory.

> The earliest two megasequences (Saulk and Tippecanoe) show very limited coverage across Europe. This is the same pattern we observed across the other three continents. The totals across the four continents show the least volume and extent of sedimentary rocks in the earliest two megasequences. The later four megasequences (Kaskaskia, Absaroka, Zuni, and Tejas, respectively) show much more volume and surface extent.[3]

From Dr. Clarey's findings, he found that the relative sea levels for North America, South America and Africa continents peaked at the Zuni megasequence. Europe relative sea

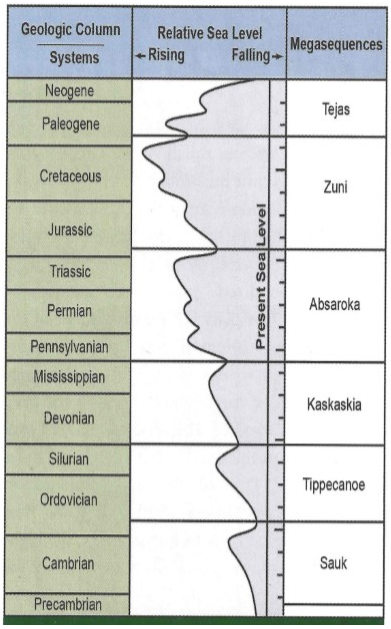
---

[1] Acts & Facts, Institute for Creation Research, *A Rock-Based Global Sea Level,* by Dr. Tim Clarey, Ph.d,. Vol. 48, No. 2, February 2019, pg. 9

[2] Acts & Facts, Institute for Creation Research, *A Rock-Based Global Sea Level,* by Dr. Tim Clarey, Ph.d,. Vol. 48, No. 12, December 2019, pg. 10-12.

[3] Acts & Facts, Institute for Creation Research, *A Rock-Based Global Sea Level,* by Dr. Tim Clarey, Ph.d,. Vol. 48, No. 12, December 2019, pg. 11-12.

levels peaked at the Absaroka megasequence, one sequence earlier. In general, Clarey believes that the Flood peaked at the Zuni megasequence – the Jurassic and Cretaceous period of the Geological Column. Dr. Clarey believes would have been the highwater mark at the 150th day of the Flood. He believes that this would have been followed by diminishing Floodwaters that laid down the Tejas megasequence in the Paleogene and Neogene period.



- See footnote. [1]

Fig. 36
Six megasequences Geologic Column Chart
Six Megasequences are shown with Geologic Column and relative sea levels.

[1] Acts & Facts, Institute for Creation Research, *A Rock-Based Global Sea Level,* by Dr. Tim Clarey, Ph.d,. Vol. 48, No. 2, February 2019, pg. 9 **NOT Approved!**

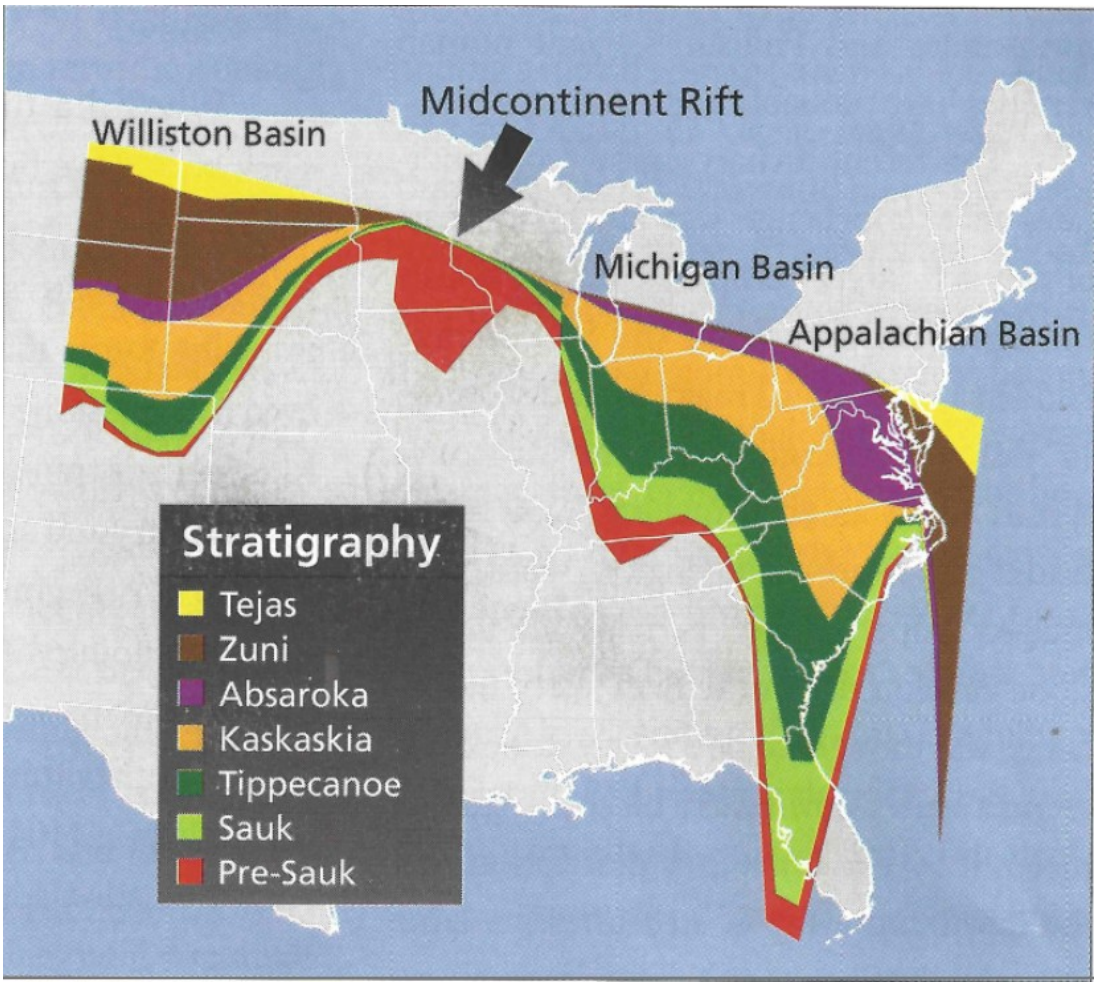
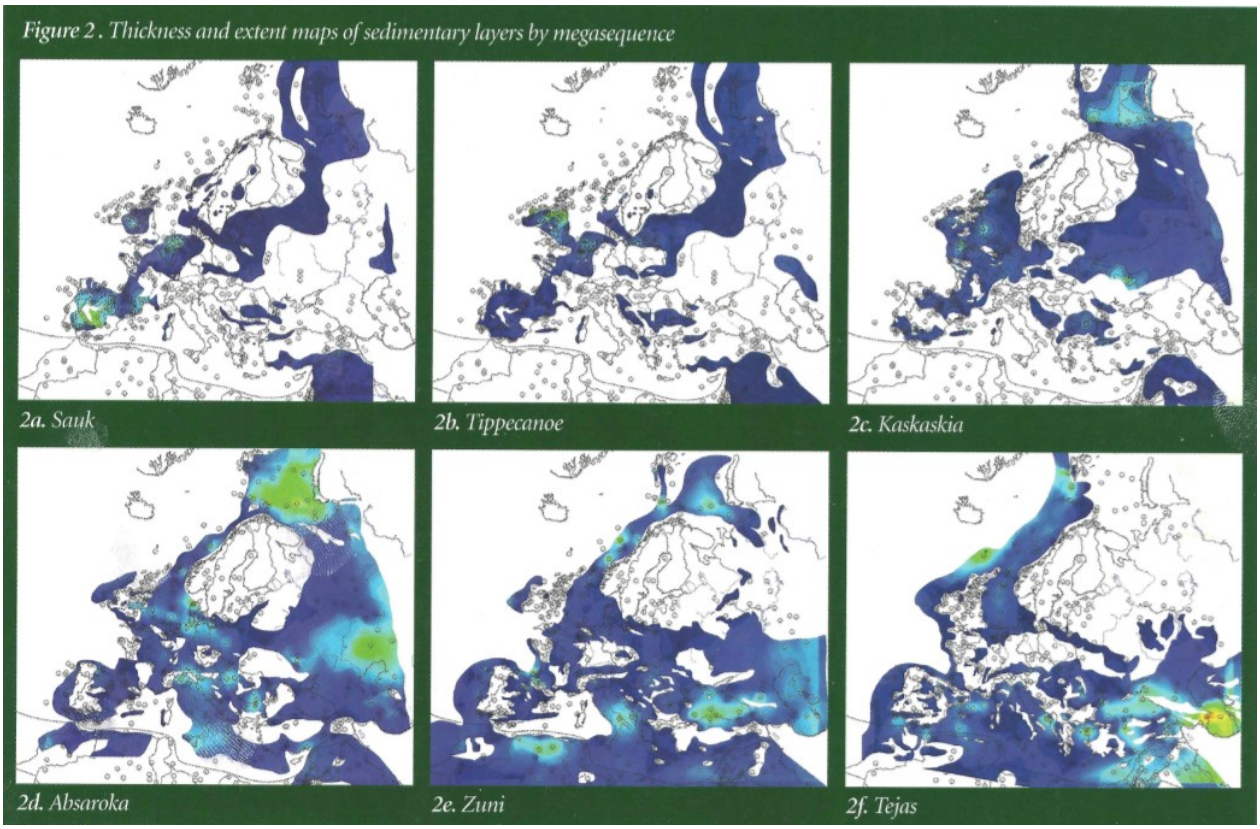


Fig. 37
Six megasequences over North America

Six megasequences are shown over North America. Each megasequences collectively is shown to have come from the north in the form of massive tsunami sheetflows.

- See footnote. [1]

[1] Acts & Facts, Institute for Creation Research, *Fountains of the Deep,* by Dr. Tim Clarey, Ph.d,. Vol. 43, No. 12, December 2014, pg. 16
- Morris, J. D. 2012, *The Global Flood: Unlocking Earth'Geologic History*, Dallas, TX: Institute for Creation Research. - **NOT Approved!**



- See footnote. [1]

Dr. Clarey noticed a pattern where all the five major extinction fell at the middle to the top range of any one of the megasequence group within the major six megasequence groups that make up the Geological Column. They are noted as following from bottom to top: First Extinction (Late Ordovician) – middle Tippecanoe Megasequence, Second Extinction (Late Devonian) – middle Kaskaskia Megasequence, Third Extinction (Permian-Triassic) – middle Absaroka Megasequence, Forth Extinction (Late Triassic) – late Absaroka Megasequence, and

Fig. 38
Six megasequences over Europe

Six Megasequences are shown over Europe. Each megasequences collectively is shown to have come from the north in the form of massive tsunami sheetflows.

[1] Acts & Facts, Institute for Creation Research, *A Rock-Based Global Sea Level,* by Dr. Tim Clarey, Ph.d,. Vol. 48, No. 12, December 2019, pg. 10-12. - **NOT Approved!**

Fifth Extinction (Cretaceous-Tretiary) – late Zuni Megasequence.[1] This pattern seems very reasonable if the more granular rock earth material was first laid down before the finer granulars. Remember, all the sediment was brought about by sheetflow tsunamis, for the large part, which came from one direction -- the north. These massive tsunamis were first Flood tsunami waves followed by massive sediment tsunami waves that was accompanied by hundreds of feet of Floodwaters above it. This met that only the very least buoyant organic matter (i.e. mammals, dinosaurs and plant that eventually became fossilized) was buried by the sediment tsunami, leaving the less buoyant organic matter to continue to be swept out in front or left behind the sediment tsunami till it was finally buried by the following tsunami waves.

> One pattern I (i.e. Dr. Tim Clarey) noticed was that many of the major extinction events do seem to coincide with the six megasequences. In fact, most of the major extinction horizons often fall within the middle or toward the top of the magasequence boundaries. … These extinctions may represent the high-water point of a megasequence or may represent the end of a megasequence cycle.[2]

From the NU Flood Theory perspective, north to south megasequence movement of sediment was likely due to the centrifugal forces of a flipped earth which caused fluctuation in the mantle resulting in internal pumping of magma and Floodwaters deep in the mantle. This pumping action and the tsunami sheet flow due to the change in the earth's rotation quickly laid down the lesser to greater megasequence, Sauk megasequence to the Zuni megsequence, based on the increasing sea level shown on the "Megasequence Geological Column Chart" where there were increasing continental area with each encroaching tsunami megasequence over both North

---

[1] Timothy Clarey, *CARVED IN STONE, Geological Evidence of the Worldwide Flood,* (first printing March 2020), Institute for Creation Research, P.O. Box 59029, Dallas, TX 75229, ISBN 978-1-946246-25-7, pg. 103.

[2] Acts & Facts, Institute for Creation Research, *A Rock-Based Global Sea Level,* by Dr. Tim Clarey, Ph.d,. Vol. 48, No. 12, December 2019, pg. 11-12. **NOT Approved!**

America and Europe. This was an accumulative affect since magma and water would have been pumping to the earth's surface, and therefore; would not have initially been able to recede back into the mantle. As the chart shows, the initial energy of this Floodwater pumping action peak at or just before the Zuni, then diminish during the Tejas. The increase in energy may also be related to the rate the mantle rotated out from PanNoah. Since each of the six megasequences came from the north to the south with increasing area and sediment volume with each overlaying sequence, this required enormous energy surges that can only be brought about by multiple worldwide tsunami sheetflows from the north bought about by the flip of the earth.

If the NU Flood Theory is correct, all of these six megasequences, geological column, must have been laid down in the first hours of the Flood before the breaking of PanNoah into continents. All the mountain ranges were formed with each of the six megasequences underlying them, such that; all the strata were laid down level before any mountains rose. All the mountains were formed hours after the start of the Flood, or earth flip. Therefore, the Tejas megasequence would have been the last major sequence laid down before the mountains rose. If all the mountain ranges were formed within hours of the earth being flipped, the high point of the sediment column and the Flood may have been reached within hours of the start of the Flood, not months. The Flood would have maintained its high level till the 150th day when its water finally began to decreased. If Dr. Clarey is correct, the average time between each megasequence would have been approximately twenty-two days – i.e. the first 150 days divided by six gaps between the six megasequences. If the NU Flood Theory is correct, the approximate time between each megasequence was hours during the initial flip of the earth before the breaking up of PanNoah into continents.

2. Same strata over multiple continents

The Global Flood, A biblical and scientific look at the catastrophe that changed the earth [1], best summarizes the vastness of the rock strata. In the Grand Canyon, the Coconino Sandstone has an average thickness of 315 feet and covers an area at least 200,000 square miles, containing at least 10,000 cubic miles of sand. This sand is thought to have been transported from the north as far as northern Utah or Wyoming. In southern Utah at a higher stratum in the Grand Canyon is the Navajo Sandstone made of very pure quartz sand. Based on the uranium-lead (U-Pb) radioactivity method from its zircon grains, it is believed to have come from the Appalachians of Pennsylvania and New York and as far as the mountains of northern in Canada.

In the Grand Canyon, the Tepeats Sandstone belongs to the Sauk Megaasequence. It covers much of United States, stretching from Canada to Mexico, from California to Maine. The Redwall Limestone belongs to the Kaskaskia Megasequence and can be found east as far as Tennessee and Pennsylvania. These same Carboniferous limestone beds are found across the ocean in England containing the same fossils and similar features, but mistakenly given different names by geologists.

The famous White cliffs along the southern coast of England are made up of Cretaceous chalk beds. These chalk beds can be traced westward across England and appear again in Northern Ireland. These same chalk beds can be traced in the other direction across France, the Netherlands, Germany, Poland, southern Scandinavia, and other parts of Europe to Turkey, then to Israel in the Middle East, and even as far as Kazakhstan.

---

[1] Dr. Andrew A. Snelling, *The Global Flood, A biblical and scientific look at the catastrophe that changed the earth*, copyright 2009, Answers in Genesis - USA, P.O. Box 510, Hebron, KY 41048, ISBN: 1-60092-264-3.

In a similar manner, the coal beds cover both the northern and southern hemisphere. In the northern hemisphere, the Upper Carboniferous (Pennsylvania) coal beds cover the eastern half of United States into Britain and Europe and into the north of the Caspian Sea. In the southern hemisphere, the same Permian coal beds are found in Australia, Antarctica, India, South Africa, and even South America!

3. Mount St. Helens

How rapid was the sedimentation, or strata, of the of the Flood laid down? The Flood event is impossible to replicate, but Mount St. Helens gives us a real laboratory of catastrophism that we see worldwide on a small scale that likely represents the Flood event.

In Michael Oard's book review in the Technical Journal, 2004, Mount St Helens—exploding the old-earth paradigm, called *Footprints in the Ash: the explosive story of Mount St Helens* by John Morris and Steven A. Austin Master Books, he describes how quickly the strata was laid down surrounding Mount St Helens

> Rapid deposition is clearly evident from the historical record at Mount St Helens. During the initial and subsequence eruptions, about ***180 m of stratified sediment*** (emphasis added) were rapidly laid down by dynamic processes (air blast, landslide, lake waves, pyroclastic flows, mudflows, air fall and stream water). These sediments contain dead plants and animals, some of which are now fossilizing. Cross-bedded and graded strata were formed rapidly and some of the strata were sufficiently lithified (within five years) to stand at near vertical slopes. Clastic dikes, which also indicate rapid deposition—to allow for soft sediment intrusion—were noted at several locations. [1]

4. Rapid sedimentation experiment

[1] TJ 18(1) 2004, Michael Oard's book review in the Technical Journal, 2004, Mount St Helens — exploding the old-earth paradigm, called, *Footprints in the Ash: the explosive story of Mount St Helens* by John Morris and Steven A. Austin Master Books, Green Forest, AR, 2003

By what process might the Flood strata be laid down so rapidly? In *Creation.com* article, 'GEOLOGICAL STRATA: THEY'RE EVERYWHERE, EVIDENCE FOR THE GLOBAL FLOOD', Jonathan O'Brien, who describes this likely Flood sedimentary process using Sedimentologist Guy Berthault's rapid sedimentation experiments, discovered that multiple stratum formed at the same time in a sideways direction, not in a vertical direction.

> Sedimentologist Guy Berthault's flume experiments demonstrated that layered sediments deposit rapidly in the manner of a horizontally advancing deposition in the direction of current flow. This is known as progradation. … In the context of a global Flood, strata will form in wide currents of sediment-laden water when a 'basin' or lowered area is created. Enormous quantities of loose sediment particles are carried along by the water currents and fall down the advancing 'face', or front, of the layer of sediment. This is how the layer grows horizontally. Depositing *sideways*, the layers are laid down like a layer of cream or icing spread sideways on a cake. [1]
>
> And,
>
> …Indeed, Berthault's experiments demonstrate that three layers can form together at the same time. As the layers form, further back ('upstream' of the current) another three can simultaneously begin to form horizontally on top of them. Still further back, another three layers can form simultaneously on top of those. Underwater, the growing formation of layers would look something like an extremely wide set of stars of gentle gradient, advancing in the direction of the current.
>
> The process can repeat until a great depth of sedimentary layers is built up. … [2]
>
> Also, with regard to geological layering,
>
> Berthault also discovered that geological layering can rapidly develop *after*, not during, deposition of the sediments, due to desiccation (drying out) creating bedding plane separations in the sediments, as the entire formation gradually hardened into rock. [3]

[1] Creation.com, Vol. 34, No. 4, 2016, Jonathan O'Brien, 'GEOLOGICAL STRATA: THEY'RE EVERYWHERE, EVIDENCE FOR THE GLOBAL FLOOD', pg. 50

[2] Creation.com, Vol. 34, No. 4, 2016, Jonathan O'Brien, 'GEOLOGICAL STRATA: THEY'RE EVERYWHERE, EVIDENCE FOR THE GLOBAL FLOOD', pg. 50

[3] Creation.com, Vol. 34, No. 4, 2016, Jonathan O'Brien, 'GEOLOGICAL STRATA: THEY'RE EVERYWHERE, EVIDENCE FOR THE GLOBAL FLOOD', pg. 51-52

Similar sedimentation process was most likely responsible for the rapid Flood sheetflow that resulted in the same strata over multiple continents and formation of megasequences over North America, Europe and Africa. This similar rapid sedimentation process resulted in multiple layering of sediment after the Mount St. Helen's volcano eruption as previously described.

XVIII. Mountain Formation, Slide Plane and Planations

How did mountains form and the three planation surfaces? In his book, *Earth in Upheaval*, Immanuel Velikovsky makes the point that no one has adequately explained the origin of mountains and their overthrusts over long distances. He gives the Alps Mountains, Chief Mountain in Montana, all the Rocky Mountain areas and the Norwegian Mountains as examples. He then asks this rhetorical question:

> What could have caused these mountains to travel across valley and uphill with their masses of granite weighing billions of tons? No force acting from inside the earth, pulling inward or pushing outward, could have created these overthrusts. Only twisting could have produced them. It could hardly have occurred if the rotation and revolution of our planet had never been disturbed. [1]

Where is that 'overthrust', or an 'overturned' limb that has slid over itself, most likely to happen? Noteworthy features of most compressional mountains are the **fold-and-thrust belts**. [2]

---

[1] Velikovsky, Immanuel. *Worlds in Collision* (New York, NY: Pocket Books, 1977), ISBN 0-671-82717-0, pp. 316.
- See the Section "East & West"

[2] Edward J. Tarbuck & Frederick K. Lutgens, *Earth: An Introduction to Physical Geology*, copyright 2005, Pearson Education, Inc., Upper Saddle River, New Jersey 07458, ISBN 0-13-114865, pp 426.

This disruption of the rotation and revolution of our planet may have been achieved by the flip of the earth.

How mountains and their planation surfaces formed is still one of the biggest mysteries to geology! In a recent book, The *Origin of Mountains*, Cliff Ollier and Colin Pain, two geomorphologists, have written on the origin of mountains [1]. They noted a few very interesting, but little-known characteristics about mountains on every continent and all over the world. The mountains are made up of folded rock. These mountains rest on layers of once level layers of sediment thousands of feet deep. These sediments overlay a 'basement rock' that was fractured and uplifted but has since been shaved flat or sheared by massive erosion at approximately sea level – the first planation surface. The second planation surface is separated by the less fold sediment rock below from the more folded sediment rock above that makes up the mountain ranges. This sheared surface often has a medium layer, such as dolomite, that indicates a slide surface. The third planation surface is found at the peaks of the mountain ranges. Ollier and Pain describe three planation surfaces related to the formation or erosion of mountain ranges. The three planations are further discussed under the following headings: 1) Planation of sheared, fractured 'basement rock', 2) Planation directly underlying the mountains, and 3) Planation of the peaks of today's mountains.

1) Planation of sheared, fractured 'basement rock'

The 'basement rock' is often greatly fractured below the shear plane and appears to have been at one time was a part of a fractured ancient mountain ridge system from another era. This planation often is found at or near sea level. It is the surface where all the thousands of feet of

[1] Cliff Ollier and Colin Pain, *The Origin of Mountains*, Routledge, London, copyright 2000, ISBN 0-415-19889-5 (hbk)

rock above it appears to have sheared the ‘basement rock’ below. This rock is often classified as Pre-Cambrian rock, as is the case of the strata near the bottom of the Grand Canyon.

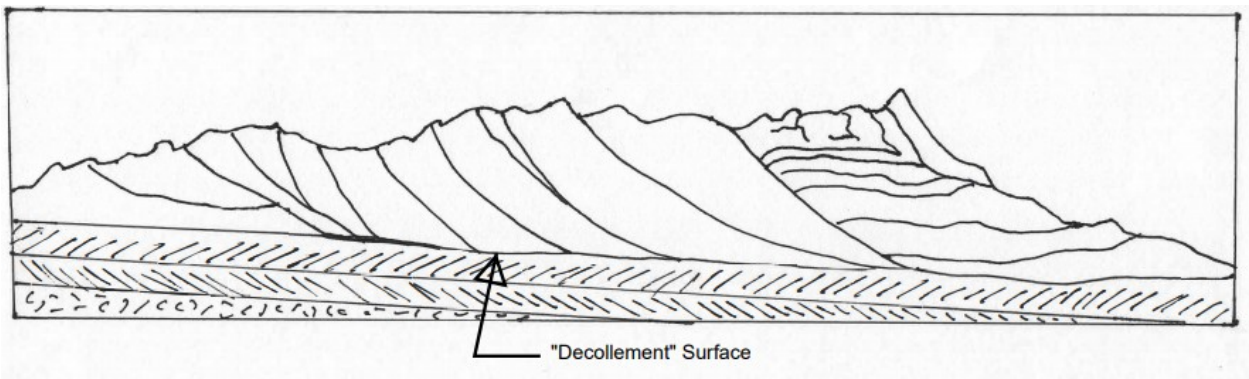


Fig. No. 39

Typical Mountain Range – Not Pushed!

The above is an example of what a typical mountain range might look like. Mountain ranges were formed as layers of sediment cascade over other layers of sediment. Mountains were not formed by a push, but by the total sedimentary mass being flung by the momentum of the flip of the earth while coming to a stop hours afterwards. Therefore, the mountain of sediments had been piled up at a relative even height over hundreds of miles from its initial high point, as opposed to being piled high then quickly diminishing after being crushed at the line of the push as in the above bulldozer example. Similar to the bulldozer analogy, "decollement" surfaces extend the total width of the mountain ranges between the undisturbed layers of sediment and the above disturbed cascaded sediment layers that had formed normal faults away from its initial high point.

- See footnote [1].

[1] Cliff Ollier and Colin Pain, The Origin of Mountains, Routledge, London, copyright 2000, ISBN 0-415-19889-5 (hbk), pg. 277.

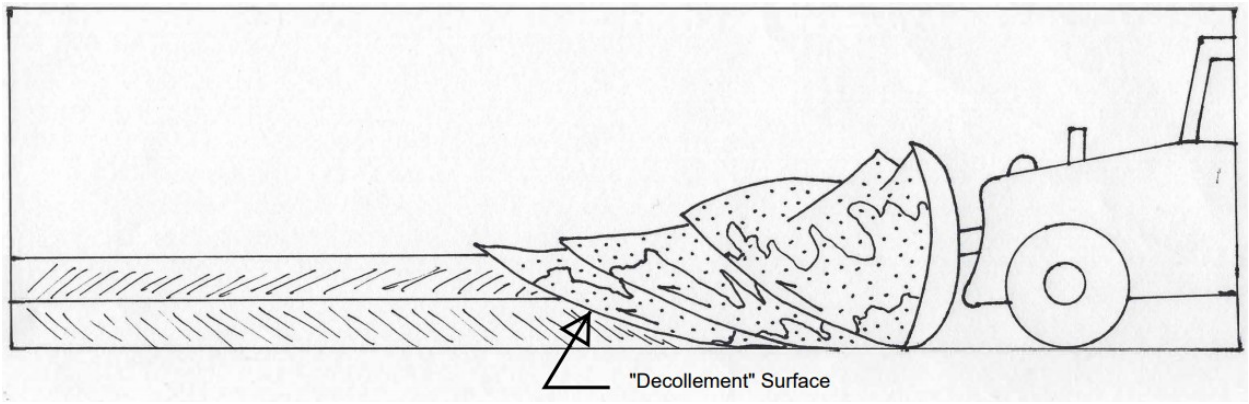


Fig. No. 40

Bulldozer Example of Push

If a bulldozer dropped its blade and begins to pushed the layers of flat sediment in front of it, the sediment would immediately begin to pile up directly in front of its blade and quickly diminish in height away from the blade. If the bulldozer pushed the sediment far enough, the sediment would form normal faults in the direction of the push forming a "decollement" surface between the undisturbed sediment and the above disturbed sediment.

If mountain ranges were pushed similar to the bulldozer scenario; given the height of mountains, the observer would expect the width of the mountain ranges and "decollement" surfaces to be only tens of miles, not hundreds of miles from its initial high point. This makes the "thin skin" tectonic concept within the Plate Tectonic theory untenable.

- See footnote [1].

[1] Cliff Ollier and Colin Pain, The Origin of Mountains, Routledge, London, copyright 2000, ISBN 0-415-19889-5 (hbk), pg. 277.

2) Planation directly underlying the mountains

In addition, the earth's highest mountains are shown to have slid nearly a hundred miles over a slide surface called a 'detachment' or 'decollement' – often over a very thin deposit surface – the second planation. This slide surfaces often had different rock types that acted as lubricants for sliding at different locations [1]. What could have made it possible for billions of tons of rock to move nearly a hundred miles relative to the undisturbed strata below?

> The structure of many mountain ranges, including the European Alps, is dominated by great nappes (overthrust, or sliding), huge sheets of rock that have clearly moved over fault planes at low angles, commonly bringing old rocks to lie over younger rocks. Underlying rocks are not deformed, and the low angle plane is known as a 'detachment' or 'decollement'. The unfolded unconformity beneath the folded rocks clearly shows that the mountain mass was not pushed up from below, but that some sort of lateral force is responsible for the folding. The nearly horizontal movement may be of about 100 km. In most instances it is marked by a layer of particularly mobile material that acts as a lubricant for the slide. Salt (halite) seems to be particularly suitable, as in the Jura Mountains and the Zagros. Dolomite seems to be also very suitable, as in the unconformity dolomite of the Naukluft Mountains. Gypsum and anhydrite also make good lubricants. Shales may provide enough lubrication, as in the Oslo Graben.

How thin is the lubricant layer?

> A slab of rocks several kilometers thick slid on a lubricated plane over a dolomite layer only 10 metres thick, and without disturbing any of the underlying rocks at all. [2]

---

[1] Cliff Ollier and Colin Pain, The Origin of Mountains, Routledge, London, copyright 2000, ISBN 0-415-19889-5 (hbk), pg. 152

[2] Cliff Ollier and Colin Pain, The Origin of Mountains, Routledge, London, copyright 2000, ISBN 0-415-19889-5 (hbk), pg. 158

The ‘decollement’ surface with the folding of the mountain above its surface is evidence of massive horizontal forces. For the Jura Mountains, the ‘decollement surface’ can be found along the Triassic evaporites [1]. The horizontal forces must have been the result of momentum as each and every grain moved in unison with each other, as opposed to only one end being pushed by one massive force. Therefore, the mountain pile is more uniform in height, as opposed to being piled up at one end had a push force been applied - if it were pushed by a bulldozer. Below, the authors give a bulldozer analogy to explain these concepts (Fig. 39).

> “It has long been recognized that some mountains are underlain by a decollement, so with the basic idea of compression it is necessary to push a thin mass of sediments over a stationary basement. This type of structure is very widespread, including the examples …. The lateral dimensions of this thin-skinned tectonics are very great, often over 100 km so the applied force has to be enormous to push this great mountainous pile uphill.
>
> Today, one common ‘explanation’ of thin-skinned tectonics is the thrusting of a wedge, in which a bulldozer pushing a mass of sand simulates movement of a nappe. Distal parts of the sand are over-ridden by sand pushed from behind, moving over thrust faults or nappes.
>
> But one would expect deformation to be greatest at the bulldozer end, where a force is applied, not at the distal part. Deformation should decrease and even disappear with distance from the applied force. This does not fit with the observed ‘breakers at the nappe front’ ....”. [2] (Fig. 40)

3) Planation of the peaks of today’s mountains.

---

[1] Cliff Ollier and Colin Pain, The Origin of Mountains, Routledge, London, copyright 2000, ISBN 0-415-19889-5 (hbk), (Fig. 8.5), pg. 154.

[2] Cliff Ollier and Colin Pain, The Origin of Mountains, Routledge, London, copyright 2000, ISBN 0-415-19889-5 (hbk), pg. 276-277

Planation surfaces are found on top of mountains in place of sharp mountain peaks all over the earth. These planation features are found in Europe in the Swiss Alps, the Jura, Apennines, Pyrenees, and Carpathians. In Asia, they are found in the Tibetan Plateau, Himalayas, and the Tien Shan. In North America, these features are found in the Sierra Nevada, the Rocky Mountains, and Cascade Range and Canadian Cordillera. In South America, planations are found in Colombia, Chile, Bolivia, and Ecuador. These are just several of many other mountain ranges found all over the world which has been noted in ***the origin of mountains***, by Cliff Ollier and Colin Pain, Table 12.1[1]. They note that the major phases of uplift occurred in the Plio-Pleistocene over a very distinct time as short as six-million-year period.[2] This is extremely narrow time frames with respect to the Geological Column time line. Today, the erosion destroys, not creates, any existing exposed planation surfaces.

4) NU Flood Theory explains Mountain Formation.

How does the NU Flood Theory explain the formations of mountains and the three planation surfaces described by Ollier and Pain: 1) Planation of sheared, fractured 'basement rock', 2) Planation directly underlying the mountains, and 3) Planation of the peaks of today's mountains? Momentum! It was the momentum of a body-force acting horizontally that acted on every grain of the uni-block sediment mass to overcome the downward pull and friction of gravity. What caused this momentum was the flip of the axis of the earth. At what speed must

[1] Cliff Ollier and Colin Pain, The Origin of Mountains, Routledge, London, copyright 2000, ISBN 0-415-19889-5 (hbk), pg. 303-306.

[2] Cliff Ollier and Colin Pain, The Origin of Mountains, Routledge, London, copyright 2000, ISBN 0-415-19889-5 (hbk), pg. 303 & 307.

this uni-block mass of sediment have been moving to result in its upper surface to cascade and slide nearly a hundred miles over a 'decollement' surface (i.e. Triassic evaporites for the Jura Mountains)? With the Floodwater sheet flowed over PanNoah, thousands of feet of eroded sediment down to nearly 'basement rock' and was quickly layered in multiple level strata over the 'supercontinent' (Fig. 41). PanNoah may have been traveling clockwise at speeds approaching the speed of sound, with respect to the speed of the underlying mantle, and finally came to a stop. Remember, with the flip of the earth, the earth is currently traveling one thousand miles per hour at the equator. The continental 'basement rock' crashed into itself like a continental train wreck, fracturing and uplifting. In a similar manner, the continents traveling hundreds of miles per hour, broke apart and came to a stop. The overlying sediment over the breaking continents jolted forward as a unit-block of sediment mass that was miles deep, instantly eroding the underlying 'basement rock' completely level at approximately sea level before coming to a stop. The 'basement rock', the original underlying pre-Flood rock, fractured as the continents came to a stop. This massive movement of sediment sliding over the 'basement rock', sheared the 'basement rock', resulting in a slide plane between the sediment and the 'basement rock' – the *first* planation surface (Fig. 42 & 43).

The top layers of the overlying sediment cascaded like a tsunami, folding and forming mountains on its upper surface, leaving undisturbed strata below. As it did so, the upper sediment compressed to form the mountains that have **fold-and-thrust belts** like the Himalayan Mountains on the north border of India**.** This created a slide plane where mountain layers slide over themselves for approximately 100 km (62 mi.). This slide plane formed along the detachment "decollement" surface – the *second* planation surface.

As this top surface of the sediment unit-block cascaded forward as a mass sediment tsunami, the Floodwaters came in the opposite direction from the north to the south, breaking against the newly formed mountain ranges (Fig. 44). The Floodwaters sheared the newly soft, mountains peaks, forming a top planation surface – the *third* planation surface. Great canyons and gorges were cut by the Floodwaters into the opposing mountains forming 'antecedent' rivers and canyons. In a similar manner, other geological features as wind gaps and water gaps were also formed.

Cliff Ollier and Colin Pain perspective of the folding rock and the formation of mountains cannot have happened simultaneously since they take a uniformitarian view that the rock that make up the mountains have always been solid rock. They do not take the Flood perspective that all the said Geological Column of sediment was laid down by the Genesis Flood event. Therefore, they have the following to say about how mountains were formed by Newton's applied force and body force. Their discussion also makes a strong Newtonian case for the NU Flood Theory in that the formation of the mountain, similar to the same mechanism of landslides, the whole surface of the upper landmass must have slid as one collective block-mass over an undisturbed sedimentary rock. This also make the case against the pushing mechanism of plate subduction, noting that, "It is simply not possible to push a sheet of rocks sideways like a table cloth." [1]

> It cannot be over-stressed that it is not possible to fold rocks by a lateral push. Ideas gained by looking at folded tablecloths or at squashed clay in a squeeze-box do not relate to the folds we see in mountains. The compressive strength of rock is very much lower than the force that would be needed to push a slab of strata a few kilometres thick and hundreds of kilometres wide. If a sufficiently large force

[1] Cliff Ollier and Colin Pain, The Origin of Mountains, Routledge, London, copyright 2000, ISBN 0-415-19889-5 (hbk), pg. 276

were somehow applied to such a slab, it would not move, but would simply be crushed at the point where the stress was applied.

Gravity applies a body force that acts on every grain, every molecule, in the rock mass and affects the whole mass in a way in which an applied force cannot. A landslide is a small example of movement under a body force, and causes folding at the toe of the landslide. Folds are not brought about by lateral shortening of the Earth's crust: they are superficial features and the folds relate only to the few kilometres of folded rock. The rock mass slid under gravity, is confined to the folded beds. We can theoretically unravel the folds and see how big the sheet of rocks was before folding, but this measures the shortening of specific strata. It is not a measure of crustal shortening.

The idea of lateral compression to make folds is a naïve, almost instinctive one. Simple analogies such as creating folds in a tablecloth by pushing the ends together make it obvious…. In the table cloth example, it should be noted that although the cloth is folded, the table top is not. This separation between the folded and unfolded is often found in nature as a decollement surface…. It is simply not possible to push a sheet of rocks sideways like a table cloth.[1] (Fig. 39 & 40)

Another evidence of sliding of one sedimentary mass sliding over another sedimentary mass or rock is the dark, glass rock material that has formed between these two surfaces by frictional melting called *pseudotachylyte*, PST. Catastrophic Plate Tectonics has noted that this is the result of "superfaults" that are the result of "superquakes" or "runaway subduction" of the original lithospheric plates.[2] This would allow the two surfaces to reach 1000°C (1800°F) needed to melt rock to become PST rock. From the NU Flood Theory perspective, PST is another example of layers of sediment mass sliding over other less disturbed sediment masses as breaking continents had been flung which had come to a stop.

---

[1] Cliff Ollier and Colin Pain, The Origin of Mountains, Routledge, London, copyright 2000, ISBN 0-415-19889-5 (hbk), pg. 275-276

[2] Timothy Clarey, *CARVED IN STONE, Geological Evidence of the Worldwide Flood,* (first printing March 2020), Institute for Creation Research, P.O. Box 59029, Dallas, TX 75229, ISBN 978-1-946246-25-7, pg. 134-137.

- Clarey, T. L. et al. 2013, Superfaults and Pseudotachylytes: Evidence of Catastrophic Earth Movements, In *Proceedings of the Seventh International Conference on Creationism.* M. Horstemeyer, ed, Pittsburgh, PA: Creation Science Fellowship, Inc.

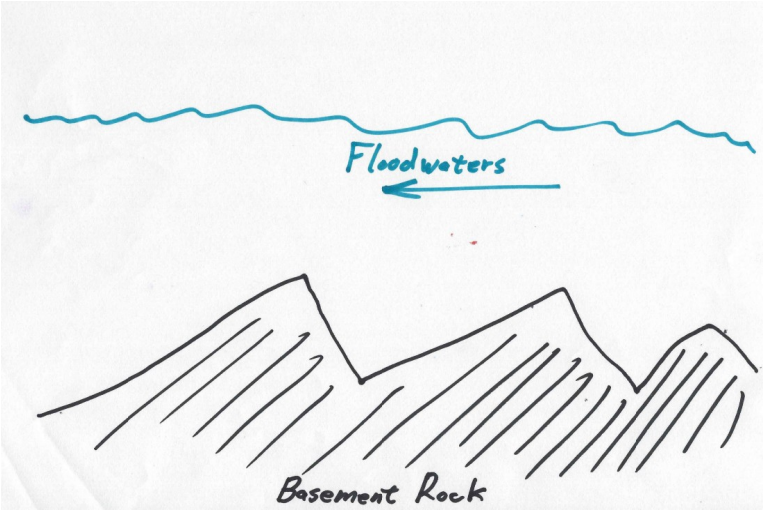


Fig. No. 41

Floodwaters Sweep Over the Continents

The earth flipped and the Floodwaters sheet-flowed over the unit-body land mass, PanNoah, where it strips off all layers of pre-flood sediment down too and including the basement rock.

Fig. No. 42

Floodwaters and Sediment Tsunamis Cover Stripped Basement Rock

Sediment tsunami drops thousands of feet of horizontal layers of its sediment loads onto PanNoah before breaking up into continents. With the earth flip, PanNoah rotated clockwise around the South Pacific while the Floodwater ocean waters, not rotating clockwise as fast as PanNoah, sheetflowed counterclockwise in the opposite direction. The sedimentary mass composed of six megasequences which had been formed within hours to what would become known as the Geological Column.

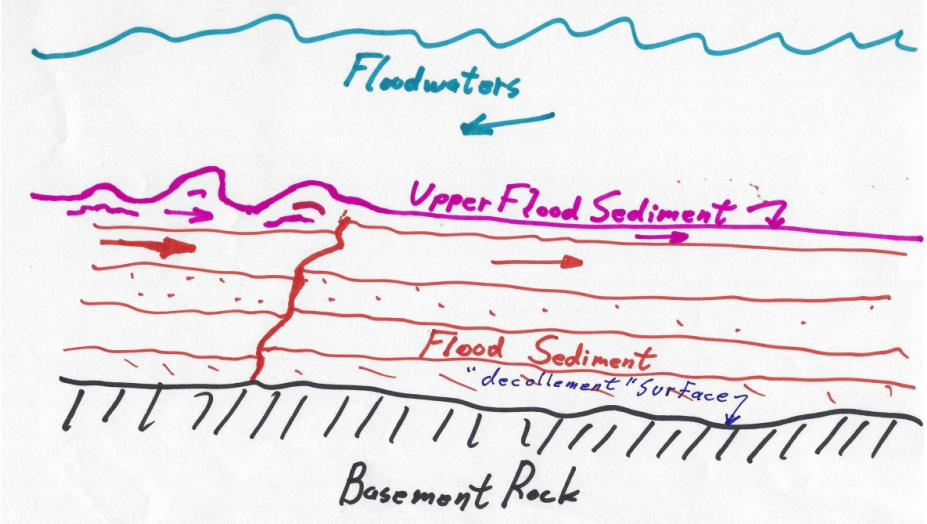


Fig. No. 43

Continental Sedimentary Mass Shift, Shearing the Basement Rock

As the clockwise movement of PanNoah begans to slow down, it begins to break-up into continents, the continental sediment mass riding on the continent basement rock also begans to come to a stop. As both did so, they began to compress. The sediment mass as a unit-body slid across the basement rock, shearing the basement rock flat leaving a shear plane, decollement surface, between the two layers.

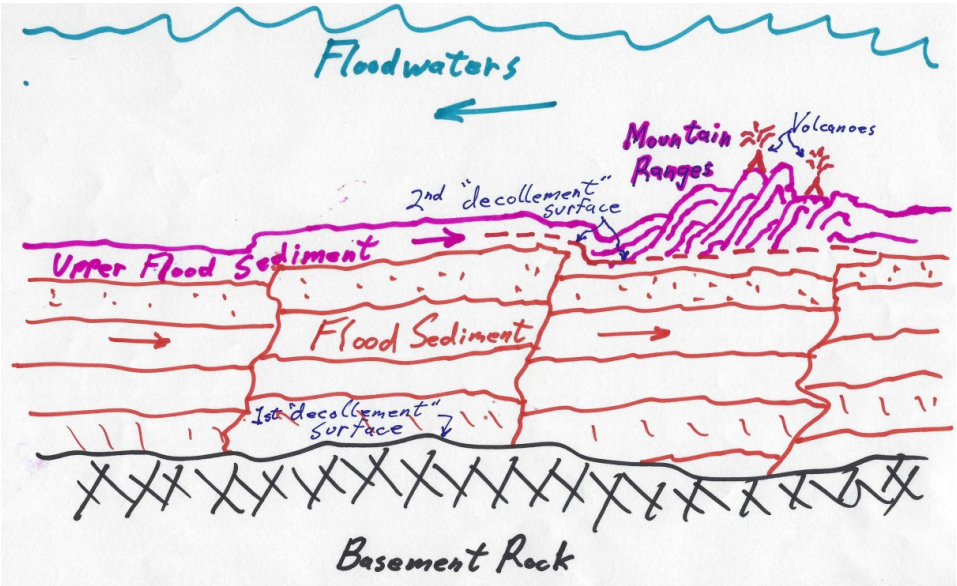


Fig. No. 44

Mountains Form over "Decollement" Surface, Crushed Basement Rock.

As continents break-up and came to a stop and the Flood sediment mass came to a stop, the upper Flood sediment compresses and sheared over the lower Flood Sediment mass. This shear zone, or a second decollement surface, allowed the upper surface to cascade to form mountain ranges. As mountain ranges compressed, its cores heat up and form a granite core as well as partial melt that outlet to the surface to form volcanoes. The basement rock also came to a stop, but was not able to rise because of the surcharge of Flood sediment over it, but crushed in place.

XIX. Appalachian Mountains

The Appalachian Mountains is another great example of a large range of mountains that have slid at least 260 kilometers (160 miles) over the continental land. Plate Tectonics describe this 'thin sheet' miles thick metamorphic rock that were transported over the eastern continental margin of North America to be 475 million years ago. After much research of the Appalachian Mountains by geophysicists and scientist in the gas and oil industry, the findings showed that the deformation was confined to only the sedimentary strata above the crystalline basement rock (thin-skinned tectonics) and not to both sedimentary strata and the crystalline basement rock (thick-skinned tectonics). This author of this article writes, "Like a wrinkled rug on a floor the sedimentary strata seem to have ridden westward on top of large, horizontal detachment zones over the crystalline basement." [1] This is the Appalachian Mountain's 'decollement' surface. In regards to the detachment of the 'thin skin', "a sheet between 10 and 20 kilometers thick was detached from the lower crust of the Inner Piedmont and the Blue Ridge and was then thrust over the continental shelf." This detachment can only mean that a 'decollement' erosion surface must have been the result of a huge mass of metamorphic rock which must have slid over its lower crust made up of sedimentary rock.

Plate Tectonics also has difficulty explaining how sedimentary rock could be found below metamorphic rock that forms the Appalachian Mountains.

> The most spectacular finding was made in the southern Appalachians. The profiles revealed that the mountains are underlain to a depth of at least 18 kilometers by horizontal layers of material that is sedimentary or once was.[2]

---

[1] *Shaping the Earth, Tectonics of Continents and Oceans*, Readings from Scientific American, The Southern Appalachians and the Growth of Continents, Frederick A. Cook, Larry D. Brown and Jack E. Oliver, October 1980, pp. 143-144

It goes on to say,

> Most of the rocks at the surface in southern Appalachians are highly deformed metamorphic ones. Furthermore, they are older than or contemporaneous with the horizontal sedimentary strata that were discovered under them.[1]

The Plate Tectonic assumption is that the metamorphic rock must be older than the sedimentary rock below it, since the metamorphic rock must have been formed deep in the earth long ago and later emerged to the surface. Therefore, the metamorphic rock must of at one time have been a flat thin sheet of rock that was pushed and slid (overthrust) over the young sedimentary rock – deforming as it moved westward over long distances. In the book, Shaping *the Earth; Tectonics of Continents and Oceans*, the writer's description of the formation of the Appalachians is as follows:

> A large seismic-reflection survey suggests that for at least half of the history of the earth continents have evolved by the stacking and shuffling of relatively thin sheets of material at their margins.[2]

also: "The thrust faults and folds indicate the rocks were much compressed in the horizontal direction. [3]

---

[2] *Shaping the Earth, Tectonics of Continents and Oceans*, Readings from Scientific American, The Southern Appalachians and the Growth of Continents, Frederick A. Cook, Larry D. Brown and Jack E. Oliver, October 1980, pp. 140

[1] *Shaping the Earth, Tectonics of Continents and Oceans*, Readings from Scientific American, The Southern Appalachians and the Growth of Continents, Frederick A. Cook, Larry D. Brown and Jack E. Oliver, October 1980, pp. 140

[2] *Shaping the Earth, Tectonics of Continents and Oceans*, Readings from Scientific American, The Southern Appalachians and the Growth of Continents, Frederick A. Cook, Larry D. Brown and Jack E. Oliver, October 1980, pp. 139

[3] *Shaping the Earth, Tectonics of Continents and Oceans*, Readings from Scientific American, The Southern Appalachians and the Growth of Continents, Frederick A. Cook, Larry D. Brown

The writers note that the thin sheet thrust occurred over 260 kilometers (162 mi.)!

> Most of the rocks at the surface in the southern Appalachians are highly deformed metamorphic ones. Furthermore, they are older than or contemporaneous with the horizontal sedimentary strata that were discovered under them. This fact suggests that roughly 475 million years ago the surface rocks began to be transported as a thin sheet for at least 260 kilometers over the eastern continental margin of the land mass that was to become North America.[1]

The writers go on to say:

> Now it is known from seismic-reflection profiles and explorations for oil and gas that the deformation is predominantly thin-skinned. Like a wrinkled rug on a floor, the sedimentary strata seem to have ridden westward on top of large, horizontal detachment zones over the crystalline basement.[2]

Concerning oil and gas in the sedimentary rocks under the "decollement surface" of the metamorphic rock:

> Sedimentary rocks are notably the best target for oil and gas exploration, because unlike igneous rocks and most metamorphic ones they have not been subjected to the pressures and temperatures that would destroy or expel the hydrocarbons.[3]

The authors are not clear as to how this all happened.

---

and Jack E. Oliver, October 1980, pp. 142

[1] *Shaping the Earth, Tectonics of Continents and Oceans*, Readings from Scientific American, The Southern Appalachians and the Growth of Continents, Frederick A. Cook, Larry D. Brown and Jack E. Oliver, October 1980, pp. 140

[2] *Shaping the Earth, Tectonics of Continents and Oceans*, Readings from Scientific American, The Southern Appalachians and the Growth of Continents, Frederick A. Cook, Larry D. Brown and Jack E. Oliver, October 1980, pp. 144

[3] *Shaping the Earth, Tectonics of Continents and Oceans*, Readings from Scientific American, The Southern Appalachians and the Growth of Continents, Frederick A. Cook, Larry D. Brown and Jack E. Oliver, October 1980, pp. 140

> It is not at all clear how a sheet between 10 and 20 kilometers thick was detached from the lower crust of the Inner Piedmont and the Blue Ridge and was then thrust over the continental shelf. Why did it split where it did and what became of the remaining 80 kilometers or so of underlying lithosphere?[1]

In conclusion, they state:

> Mountain ranges around the world (the western Cordillera, the eastern Andes, the Mauritanides, the Alps, the Urals, the Caledonides, the Zagros, the Himalayas and Australia-Timor) may consist of thin thrust sheets as do the southern Appalachians.[2]

This field evidence of the Appalachians contradicts the Plate Tectonic Theory. From a Plate Tectonic perspective, no sound reason exists for sediment under a metamorphosed thin sheet, or how it is possible for a thin-sheet to move over 162 miles. And, the Appalachian Mountains is the general rule regarding thin-sheet metamorphic rock having slid a hundred miles over sedimentary rock, not the exception when it comes to other mountains. Metamorphism, by definition, is the result of great heat and pressure, and since the earth is theorized to have originated from a molten state and cooled from the surface down, any rock below the metamorphic sheet should have been long metamorphosed with depth by greater heat and pressure. Instead, the sediment below the metamorphic rock contains oil and gas hydrocarbons, which strongly implies the sediments were never subject to extensive heat or pressure. This heat and pressure would have destroyed these hydrocarbons needed for the formation of the overlaying metamorphic "thin sheet" rock.

---

[1] *Shaping the Earth, Tectonics of Continents and Oceans*, Readings from Scientific American, The Southern Appalachians and the Growth of Continents, Frederick A. Cook, Larry D. Brown and Jack E. Oliver, October 1980, pp. 151

[2] *Shaping the Earth, Tectonics of Continents and Oceans*, Readings from Scientific American, The Southern Appalachians and the Growth of Continents, Frederick A. Cook, Larry D. Brown and Jack E. Oliver, October 1980, pp. 155

According to the NU Flood Theory, the underside of the metamorphic thin sheet was a slide plane where the Appalachian Mountains slid over during the breakup with Africa. As the mountains, initially made up of a tsunami of cascading sediments over the uni-mass of sediment that had come to a stop, slid over itself, it formed a "decollement" slide plane, resulting in massive heat and pressure over this cascading sheet primarily in a horizontal direction, forming the metamorphic thin sheet, leaving the sediment uni-mass below absent of much of the pressure and heat. Therefore, the potential formations of oil and gas hydrocarbons were left in-tack without being destroyed.

There are no "subduction" trenches on the east coast of North America and South America as found along the Ring of Fire. Note that it is just a forgone conclusion that the subduction process has moved these massive metamorphosed thin sheet, 10 and 20 kilometers thick, over 160 miles. Advocates of Plate Tectonics have assumed that subduction must have occurred since there must have been some push force to explain the risen formation of the Appalachian Mountains. What the advocates fail to do is: 1. Identify any delineation of "subduction", and 2. To explain the bulldozer analogy enigma how it is possible by the laws of physics to push hundreds of miles of rock without first crushing the initial front-end rock.

In a similar vein, when North America tore away, after being pushed by Africa, the Mauritanide Mountain Range of Africa and Appalachian Mountain Range of North America were formed. These mountain ranges fit as a puzzle in terms of location with respect to one another on opposite sides of the Atlantic Ocean. These mountains ranges are similar in size, shape and composition. The following is from the book, *Shaping the Earth, Tectonics of Continents and Oceans*:

> The Mauritanide mountain chain of western Africa is characterized from east to west by a series of belts that are similar in some ways to the Appalacian belts. The eastern Mauritanides are made up of unmetamorphosed sedimentary strata partially covered by metamorphic rocks that have overridden the sediments from the west along thrust faults. To the west are older high-grade metamorphic rocks that resemble those of the southern Appalachian Piedmont…..In a broad sense the Mauritaides or western Africa are a mirror image of the Appalachians.[1]

XX. Mount St. Helens

In May 18, 1980, Mount St. Helens in Washington state erupted and has completely changed the view of many scientists where they can no longer simply assume that the geography of the earth must have occurred by old earth geological processes popularly known as "the present is the key to the past", but now must consider catastrophism as another possibility. Many geologists call this 'actualism' as opposed to uniformitarianism.[2] This catastrophic event became a catastrophic icon for how canyons, antecedent rivers, laminated clays, multi-stratum, mudstones, shales, carbonate muds, fine volcanic ash beds, pre-coal peat seams, polystrate trees and massive floating log mat occurred as a result of the volcanic eruption. All these catastrophic features are found all over the world that were the result of the Genesis Flood as possibly described by the NU Flood Theory.

The following is a summary of the *Answers* magazine article, dated April – June 2015, called *Lasting Lessons from Mount St. Helens*, written by Andrew A. Snelling, Joe Francis, and

---

[1] *Shaping the Earth, Tectonics of Continents and Oceans*, Readings from Scientific American, The Southern Appalachians and the Growth of Continents, Frederick A. Cook, Larry D. Brown and Jack E. Oliver, October 1980, pp. 146

[2] Acts & Facts, Institute for Creation Research, *A Rock-Based Global Sea Level,* by Dr. Tim Clarey, Ph.d,. Vol. 49, No. 5, May 2020, pg. 11.

Tom Hennigan.[3] Mount St. Helens volcano erupted, removing the whole northern side of the mountain causing an avalanche two-thirds of a cubic mile of rock to slide downhill to become the largest observed landslide on record. Years after this calamity, it became a natural laboratory for scientists to understand how quickly a catastrophic disaster can reshape the earth and return to its once natural environment. This catastrophic event was especially helpful in giving evidence that support a recent Genesis Flood and demolish the once held ideas dispensed by evolutionary uniformitarians.

The initial blast was equivalent to 20 megatons of TNT, approximately equal to 33,000 atomic bombs –one atomic bomb exploding every second for nine hours. Ash cloud rose 15 miles high blanketing eleven states and several Canadian provinces with dust. Some towns were engulfed in complete darkness in noon day. While the dust plume was relatively small compared to the surface of the earth, it still managed to cool the earth a fraction of a degree. The initial blast had speeds of over 650 miles per hour destroying the surrounding forest within 230 square miles, mostly to the north of the volcano cone. Douglas firs as tall as 200 feet were instantly stripped of their branches and snapped like toothpicks. As the volcano avalanche slid into Spirit Lake to the north, it pushed tsunami waves of water outward into the adjacent forest. The Douglas firs logs were swept back into Spirit Lake. By the end of the day, over one million logs were floating on the lake causing many logs to float upright. It had a similar appearance to the petrified upright logs at Specimen Ridge in Yellowstone National Park. Over time enormous log mats floated on Spirit Lake. Much of the branches were broken and the logs had lost their bark. Scuba investigators reported that the bottom of the lake was intermingled with volcanic sediment and a layer of peat more than three feet thick.

---

[3] *Answers*, April-June 2015, Volume 10, No. 2, Dr. Andrew A. Snelling, Joe Francis, and Tom Henningan, Lasting lessons from Mount St. Helens, pg. 56.

This “Spirit Lake peat” was both compositionally and texturally similar to certain coal beds of the eastern United States. This catastrophe created complex sediment layers up to 600 feet thick. It produced several slurries of volcanic ash that moved away from the volcano at velocities up to 80 miles per hour. It created many unexpected different layers that formed in seconds to a few minutes. This includes many fine volcanic ash beds ranging in thickness from a tiny fraction of an inch to three feet. In other locations of the earth with very similar features are believed to be millions of years old by many uniformitarian geologists.

Nearly two years after the initial volcanic eruption, on March 19, 1982, another explosion erupted. This time a thick snow pack in the crater melted, creating a destructive mudflow. It carved through the earlier deposits that had blocked Spirit Lake, cutting individual canyons up to 140 feet deep in a single day. It now resembles the North and South Rims of the Grand Canyon, except it is one fortieth the scale of the real Grand Canyon. As might be expected, it did not cut a direct path, but it cut a meandering path through the soft debris. Several months later, a melted snow pack cut through hard basalt bedrock forming the Loowit Canyon which was more than 100 feet deep. Step Canyon, a third nearby canyon, was also formed, cutting through lava and ash layers up to 600 feet deep.

In June 1992, large samples were taken from the last lava flow. In 1996, these samples were sent to a laboratory to be radiometrically dated using a potassium-argon method. This test measured the amount of argon found in the rock samples after supposedly radioactive decay from the potassium atoms had occurred after the lava had cooled. After only ten years, the rock samples were dated 350,000 years old, and the minerals within the rock were dated up to 2.4 million years old. In general, this should not give confidence in the dates given by radiometric dating methods.

XXI. The Origin of the Earth's Radioactivity

Radioisotope dating is perhaps the most convincing argument for old earth. Typically, only igneous and metamorphic rocks, not sedimentary rock, are dated by radioisotope dating methods.

> Sedimentary rock, the kind that contains most fossils, cannot be directly dated by this method, since it consists of eroded and redeposited minerals from previously existing rock. It no longer constitutes an original and datable specimen, though sometimes the cementing material can be dated. All radioisotope dating methods are only applicable to igneous or metamorphic rocks, those which were previously in a hot, molten condition. Cooling of the molten magma from a liquid into a solid starts the "clock" ticking at zero, according to the theory.[1]

It has always has been assumed that the half-life rate of radiometric dating has always been constant and that no natural process was able to influence radioactive decay. The decay rates have shown to be quite stable whether changes were made in pressure, temperature, chemical or bombardment to high energy particles. Recent discoveries now challenge this stereotypical thinking. This following are short snippets and summary of the article in Journal of Creation, called Neutrinos-the not-so-neutral particles, written by Emil Silvestru.

> Data from Brookhaven National Laboratory showed a statistical discrepancy of measured decay rates published over the years.[2] Si measured decay rates revealed

---

[1] Dr. John D. Morris, *The Global Flood, Unlocking Earth's Geologic History,* copyright 2012, first printing, Creation Research, P.O. Box 59029, Dallas, TX 75229, *ISBN: 978-1-935587-12-5*, Library of Congress Catalog Number: 2012949341, *pp.* 134 & 136.

[2] *Journal of Creation*, Neutrinos – the not-so-neutral particles, by Emil Silvestru, Volume 24(3) 2010, ISSN 1036-2916, pg 13.
- The strange case of solar flares and radioactive elements, 23 August 2010, news.stanford,edu/news/2010/august/sun-082310.html, 7 September 2010.

seasonal variations (modulation), being slightly (0.1%) [1] faster in the winter than summer.[2]

In early December 2006, Ephraim Fiscbach and Jere Jenkins showed that a spike in X-ray flux due to the solar flare coincided with a dip in manganese decay rate. [3]

The two researchers continued their work, however, and studied another set of data from an experiment performed at the Federal Physical and Technical Institute of Germany and found out that 226Ra decay rates also showed seasonal variation. The importance of this discovery lies not only in the simply reinforcing the statistics but also in the fact that unlike the previously mentioned radioisotopes (decaying by B decay), the radium-226 decay is of alpha type. [4]

Noted below is another consideration regarding radioactivity rate of decay and metamorphic rock.

Any metamorphic event, no matter how minor, can alter the apparent date of the sample. Many Precambrian-age rock show evidence of several metamorphic events (likely caused by intense heat and pressure during the Flood.). [5]

Keep in mind that the author of the NU Flood Theory contends that nearly all the metamorphic rock found at the surface of the earth was formed at the surface of the earth, not at deep depth. This was due to sudden great pressures and temperatures imposed by the flip of the

---

[1] *Journal of Creation*, Neutrinos – the not-so-neutral particles, by Emil Silvestru, Volume 24(3) 2010, ISSN 1036-2916, pg 13.
- The mystery of the varying nuclear decay, 2 October 2008,physicsworld.com/cws/article/news/36108, Accessed 7 September 2010.

[2] *Journal of Creation*, Neutrinos – the not-so-neutral particles, by Emil Silvestru, Volume 24(3) 2010, ISSN 1036-2916, pg 13..

[3] *Journal of Creation*, Neutrinos – the not-so-neutral particles, by Emil Silvestru, Volume 24(3) 2010, ISSN 1036-2916, pg 13.

[4] *Journal of Creation*, Neutrinos – the not-so-neutral particles, by Emil Silvestru, Volume 24(3) 2010, ISSN 1036-2916, pg 13
- Neutrinos are elementary particles with no change and insignificant mass (0.1 eV compared to the electron's 0.5 MeV).

[5] Timothy Clarey, *CARVED IN STONE, Geological Evidence of the Worldwide Flood,* (first printing March 2020), Institute for Creation Research, P.O. Box 59029, Dallas, TX 75229, ISBN 978-1-946246-25-7, pg. 76.

earth resulting in the momentum of breaking continental masses. This simply means that much of the sedimentary rock that was created by the Flood event by the momentum of the flip of the earth created the metamorphic rock as the continents came to a stop within hours to days of the start of the Flood. Therefore, the metamorphic rock cannot be any older than the above or below sedimentary rock that did not become metamorphic rock.

Evidently, geological history does make the case the "intense heat and pressure" of metamorphic rock changes the radioactive half-life rate of radiometric dating. Does the NU Flood Theory explain the above seasonal variations anomaly and the origin of the Earth's radioactivity? In *In the Beginning: Compelling Evidence for Creation and the Flood*, author Walter Brown believes that there is strong evidence that nearly all the known radioactivity elements known on earth are mostly found within the continental granitic rock, not in the ocean basalt rock. [1] Research shows that, "…rock samples from magmas that were stripped from the lower crust during rapid volcanic ascent show between 10 to 30 times more potassium present compared to oceanic crust. So, it appears that the lower continental crust became a zone of concentrated radioactive elements". [2] "The fact that most of today's large inventory of U, Th, and K in the continental crust is locked into its primary minerals strongly implies that these elements have resided within the continental crust - and not the mantle…"[3] "In the Hydroplate Theory, Dr. Walter Brown makes a compelling case as to how and why these radiometric

---

[1] Brown, Walter, *In the Beginning:, Compelling Evidence for Creation and the Flood, Eighth Edition*, in the section 'The Origin of Earth's Radioactivity' http://creationscience.com/onlinebook/IntheBeginningTOC.html

[2] Timothy Clarey, *CARVED IN STONE, Geological Evidence of the Worldwide Flood,* (first printing March 2020), Institute for Creation Research, P.O. Box 59029, Dallas, TX 75229, ISBN 978-1-946246-25-7, pg. 156.

- Baumgardner, J. R., Distribution of radioactive isotopes in the earth, *Radioisotopes and the Age of the Earth:* A Young-Earth Creationist Research Initiative, 49-94.

[3] *Journal of Creation*, Vol. 26(3), 2012, *Could most of the earth's U, Th, and K have been in the mantle prior to the Flood*, by John Baumgardner, ISSN 1036-2916, p. 48.

elements are found almost exclusively in the granitic continents, not the ocean floor. He concludes that it is the sinuous fluttering of the continental rock plates that creates a 'piezoelectric effect'. This action caused a high buildup of voltage differences that released a current through the granitic crust. This "Z-Pinch" was brought about by the stripping of electrons from the neutron making the neutron more positive. The electron charge and the positive charges travel in opposite directions till the voltage differences are charged and released as a current between the two charges in an electrical plasma transfer manner. It travels through solid rock in a similar manner as voltage differences in the air creates lightning bolts and thunder to occur almost instantly on a stormy night.

Brown believes that the Floodwaters rushed out from under the continental plates (Hydroplates) causing these plates fluttered, building up huge voltage differences that were then released to create new elements that were both stable and unstable radioactive elements. In a similar manner, the Noah's Upheaval (NU) Flood Theory believes PanNoah, continental granite uni-plate, was cast over the Floodwaters due to the flip of the earth. In doing so, PanNoah fluttered, forming voltage differences, releasing the current, forming the stable and unstable radioactive elements. [1]

The difference between the two Flood models in forming the radioactive elements is that in the Hydroplate model, the rushing Flood waters beneath the continental plates are said to have fluttered these plates. In the Noah's Upheaval (NU) Flood Theory, PanNoah fluttered because the mantle rotated out from underneath the uni-continental plate, with the explosion of the "Fountains of the Deep" erupting to the surface of the earth. In either case, the fluttering action

---

[1] **In the Beginning: Compelling Evidence for Creation and the Flood**

http://creationscience.com/onlinebook/IntheBeginningTOC.html
http://www.creationscience.com/

on the continental granite crust is effectively the same. This author believes that Brown's explanation given of the source of the radioactive elements in the earth's crust is a very valid theory and should be explored further.

How does the above explanation of the origin of radioactivity in the continental crust might explain today's seasonal variations measurement of radioactivity? The seasonal variation may be due to the fact that the moon and the earth's orbit is not circular, but slightly oblong. Therefore, the gravitation pull of the sun varies as the distance between the earth and sun varies. This variation in gravitational pull results in the slight fluctuation of the earth's continental crust resulting in the potential seasonal variations measurement of radioactivity. Variations in the output Neutrinos may also have contributed to these seasonal variations.

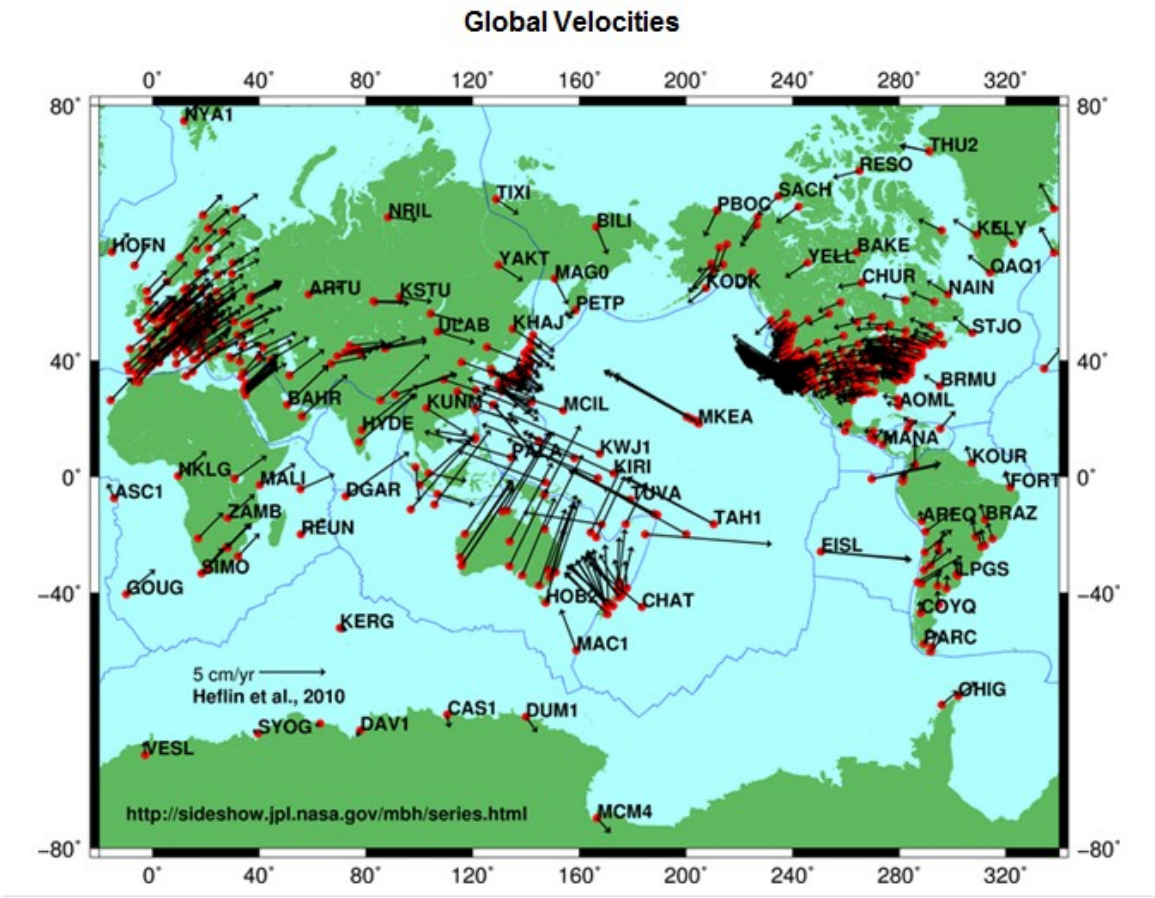


Fig. No. 45

Global Positioning System (GPS) [19]

The Global Positioning System (GPS) is a constellation of 30 satellites which is used for navigation and precise geodetic position measurements. Daily position estimates are determined from satellite signals which are recorded by GPS receivers on the ground. Data from over 1000 stations have been analyzed at the Jet Propulsion Laboratory, California Institute of Technology under contract with the National Aeronautics and Space Administration. Horizontal velocities, mostly due to motion of the assumed Earth's tectonic plates and deformation in plate boundary zones, are represented on the maps by arrows extending from each site. Click on the list of names to see detailed time series for a particular site.

http://sideshow.jpl.nasa.gov/mbh/series.html

Notice that there is a clockwise rotation residual movement of Africa, Europe and Asia. Note how the residual movement of Australia, New Zealand, and Hawaii tends to be pointing to the Mariana trench where PanNoah initially broke up.

XXII. GPS Measurements

> The Global Positioning System (GPS) is a constellation of 30 satellites which is used for navigation and precise geodetic position measurements. Daily position estimates are determined from satellite signals which are recorded by GPS receivers on the ground. Data from over 1000 stations have been analyzed at the Jet Propulsion Laboratory, California Institute of Technology under contract with the National Aeronautics and Space Administration. Horizontal velocities, mostly due to motion of the Earth's tectonic plates and deformation in plate boundary zones, are represented on the maps by arrows extending from each site.[1]

Does the GPS measurements better support Plate Tectonics or NU Flood Theory? The data shows that the continents and islands are currently moving inches per year in a specific direction. The Global Positioning System (GPS) is made up of 1000 stations with GPS receivers on the ground collected by 30 satellites that carefully detect the slightest movement of each station in the x-y-z axis measuring direction and velocity. The data was then analyzed at the Jet Propulsion Laboratory, California Institute of Technology which was contracted by the National Aeronautics and Space Administration. The velocities and direction of each data point was then noted as arrows on a map (Fig. 45). This satellites data shows the motions as arrows with directions and magnitude for all the continents on a map.

According to the Plate Tectonic Theory, Pangaea moved northward from the direction of Antarctica. At the time of Pangaea, Europe was fixed to Africa by Spain on the northeast edge of Africa, but was divided by a sliver of the Tethys Sea (Fig. 2). Over eons, Africa and Europe shifted slightly north. Africa moved counter clock-wise, relative to Europe and Asia. Europe and Asia rotated slightly clockwise. Australia moved northward from Antarctica. India moved northward and rotated counterclockwise from Antarctica. The movement of all these land masses closed the gap of the said Tethys Sea. North America moved northwest and clockwise while

[1] Jet Propulsion Laboratory, California Institute of Technology under contract with the National Aeronautics and Space Administration, http://sideshow.jpl.nasa.gov/mbh/series.html

South America moved west from Antarctica. Europe and Africa remained relatively fixed compared to the westward movements of both North and South America. In general, Pangaea came straight north from the South Pole direction to its present position, but not in a clockwise direction.

Plate Tectonics predicted final movement, in general, does not agree with the arrows direction and magnitude of The Global Positioning System (GPS). If Plate Tectonics shows North America moving clockwise, not counterclockwise. South America is shown to move northwest direction, but not with a counterclockwise movement. Europe and Asia moved northward and slightly clockwise while Africa is northward and counterclockwise. But, the GPS movement for both continental movements are primarily clockwise. Also, in order to form major mountain ranges as the Himalayan Mountains, continental masses must converge similar to the expectation of India slamming into Asia. This in contrary to the GPS clockwise movement of Africa, Europe, Asia and India all moving together as one mass.

On the other hand, the movement of PanNoah, as described by the NU Flood Theory, better agreed with the actual data of the Global Positioning System (GPS). The initial movement of PanNoah was in a clockwise movement across the Pacific Ocean that resulted in its breakup of the continents in their present position. Therefore, the break-up of Africa, Europe and Asia residual movement was clockwise and uniform. The break-up residual movement of North America and South America was by peeling away from Europe and Africa in a uniform counterclockwise direction in the same manner as two opposing gear movements.

The GPS arrows are much longer for the islands of the South Pacific, Australia, and the Indonesian Islands. Why is there more of a migration of the islands of the Pacific Ocean over the ocean floor relative to the movement of Europe, Asia, and Africa continents? How much of this

movement is related to actual plate movement verses the islands moving independently as over the underlying plate? The GPS station devices are placed on the land, not on the ocean floor, so they are measuring only land movement. The implied continental plate movements may not be a good representation of actual plate movements. This means that these islands are moving farther distance each year relative to other locations of the world, which implies that the Pacific Ocean plates are moving at a faster rate, or there is greater residual movement of these islands since the South Pacific was where PanNoah initially was flung leaving these first islands in its wake.

Not only are Pacific islands moving at a greater distance, but their directions are conflicting with each other. Australia is moving northwestward, while the islands of the South Pacific are moving eastward. Plate Tectonic attempts to explain how these plates converge and then subducts. But it does not adequately explain how stiff, flat tectonic plates move in conflicting directions that are many miles deep which radically warped or bent horizontally down in depth along the northern and western trench surrounding Australia and New Zealand.

If Plate Tectonics were true, mountainous regions as the Alps and Himalaya Mountains, the arrows should be shortening in the horizontal direction, since the continents are colliding, dramatically slowing down at the converging, or subducting plates. One would not expect the length and direction of the GPS arrows to be nearly as uniform in these locations. The direction of these arrows should also be moving in an up or down elevation due to the pushing up of the mountains, or the downward thrust due to the subduction of the colliding Indian/Asia plates. Instead, the arrows appear to show Europe, Asia and Africa moving as a unit-body in a clockwise direction, including mountainous regions, with a very uniform magnitude and direction.

The NU Flood Theory better explained the data in terms of the residual movement of all the continents – as opposed to the tectonic plate movements proposed by Plate Tectonic. The GPS measurement is expected to be more uniform with the NU Flood Theory, since PanNoah initially rotated clockwise as a unit-body. The GPS measurements may be very useful in providing data that shed lights on what were the final movements of all the continents. The NU Flood Theory correctly predicts that the continents of Europe, Asia, and Africa are all moving in a clockwise direction. Notice that nearly all the GPS arrows point in the direction of the PanNoah initial break-up epicenter – the Mariana Trench. Australia as well as most other islands in the Pacific Ocean, such as Indonesian Islands, are moving counterclockwise, relative to Asia, toward the Mariana Trench as predicted. The fractures in the ocean floor also show this. Since this area in the South and West Pacific Ocean was where the first PanNoah break-up was, you would expect that this is where the larger residual movement would be relative to anywhere else in the world. Also, Greenland, North America and South America traveled in an opposing gear movement in a counter-clockwise an in a northeast direction in their final residual movements that may not have initially been expected.

XXIII. Islands Move

On Friday's March 11, 2011, Japan's catastrophic earthquake of 8.9 magnitude shifted the Earth's axis by about 6 1/2 inches (17 centimeters) and moved Honsh, its main island, by eight feet. The quake and its tectonic shift resulted from "thrust faulting" along the boundary of the Pacific and North America plates. The Pacific plate pushes under a far western wedge of the North America plate at the rate of about 3.3 inches (83 millimeters) per year, but a colossal earthquake can provide enough of a

jolt to dramatically move the plates, with catastrophic consequences, according to the USGS [1] , an advocate of Plate Tectonics. Kenneth Hudnut, a USGS geophysicist, said experts who read data including from global positioning systems to determine the extent of the shift. [2]

It is expected by the NU Flood Theory that a colossal earthquake could move Honsh, Japan by eight feet. It illustrates that islands can move under catastrophic conditions by an earthquake. The earth's axis can even be further tilted. This must certainly be true if the earth had flipped as during the Flood. What is not convincing is the thin tectonic plates push or pull hundreds of thousands of square miles as defined by Plate Tectonics causing an 8.9 magnitude earthquake and even the formation of continents and islands, such as Japan. Instead, continental masses were flung and continental pieces, island, broke off, as describe in the "Earthquakes, Volcanoes & Ring of Fire – w/o Subduction!" section by what has been called "Sling Tectonics." It better describes the geophysics of the earthquakes, volcanoes and the "Ring of Fire" and Japan's 8.9 magnitude earthquake.

XXIV. Mythology, Comets, and the Flood.

The Genesis Flood and its after effect were so catastrophic that ancient civilizations may have had a collective amnesia in trying to explaining it. Their world had literally flipped. The earth was covered by a worldwide flood and completely been devastated. The cloud of darkness that covered segments of the earth lasted for month, if not years, after the Ark had landed. The ancients believed that the sky had literally collapsed and that clear sunny days would never return. Remnant asteroids continued to strike and terrorize generations of Noah's family long

[1] https://www.space.com/11115-japan-earthquake-shortened-earth-days.html

[2] https://phys.org/news/2011-03-quake-japan-feet-usgs.html

after the Noah's family left the Ark. The interior continental land had not stabilized. Mountains were collapsing. Waters of inland seas were carving canyons and flooding the low lands as they flowed out to rising oceans. In all this, new civilizations were forming all over the world after having been scattered by God from the city with the tower of Babel that had been destroyed. The ancient people in a very short time had not only forgot God, but were blaming Him for their rejection from Babel. They despised Gods total destruction of all life by the Flood including their descendants. The total surface of the earth was destroyed never to be the same again. They did not see God as the loving God who saved mankind by saving a righteous Noah and his family. Instead, their first natural base response was to deny God and to dissociate their sins with the devastation around them, but this was not really possible to deny the obvious. Therefore, in their rejection of God, they would rather accept the demonic lies that God was once again judging and trying to destroy them. Therefore, God was the god of darkness, not light, with evil motives that must be satisfied by human sacrifice. When they saw the remanent terrorizing asteroids that were striking the earth or blazed over the night skies, the ancients associated these with feared flaming creatures as blazing snake, dragon, bird or bull that demanded their worship. These creatures were associated with the star consolations, such as the Zodiac, that came about because of the Flood event or these were creatures that they were already familiar with what they later became deified in rejection of the true God. Pre-Flood ancients were certainly aware of the serpent that tempted Adam and Eve in the Genesis story and most likely already part of their religious culture that continued into the post-Flood. Therefore, in many ancient religions, myths and stories, the star consolations interrelate with each other in a large part. Noah and members of his family would themselves become deified by the ancients as heroes and gods that saved the world in mythical manner.

The Bible is the inerrant word of God that has withstood the critique of scoffers throughout the ages and will continue too in the future. The Genesis Flood account in the Bible has been one of the most carefully examined account of the Bible. There are many myths and folklores from many ancient cultures with similar features to the Genesis Flood that give validity to the Flood account. It is an event echoed by hundreds of legendary accounts from all around the world (Morris 2001), possibly as many as 500 according to some sources (Conolly and Grigg 2000). The narratives include various similarities, which can include such things as man in transgression, destruction from a divine being, a favored family, a vessel or means of safety provided, destruction by water, humanity saved, animals saved, universal or global destruction, landing on a mountain, birds sent out, survivors worship, and divine favor is placed upon those saved (White) [1].

These myths and folklores from many ancient cultures also have several common features among themselves that are not specifically mentioned in the Genesis Flood which may have a kernel-of-truth as to how the Flood may have been initiated. Here are several noted features: 1. The sky had fallen, as fine black volcanic ashes filled the atmosphere for perhaps years after the Flood. 2. The earth was initially struck by comets or asteroids that seem to initiate the destruction of mankind and or earth, and 3. A change in the orientation of the sun, moon and stars with respect to the earth imply that it may have been the earth's axis that greatly tilted, or flipped.

What are several historical evidences, or myths, that the Flood may have been the result of a comet, or meteoroids, having rained from the heavens? Bruce Masse, an environmental

[1] Brodie Hodge and Laura Welch. *The FLOOD of NOAH, Legends & Lore of Survival,* (second printing March 2016), Master Books, P.O. Box 726, Green Forest, AR 72638, ISBN 13: 978-0-89051-801-4, pg. 2.

archaeologist at Los Alamos National Laboratory, contends that almost every culture has a legend about a great flood, and—with a little reading between the lines—many of them mention something like a comet on a collision course with Earth just before the disaster [1]. Among 175 flood myths, Masse found two of particular interest. A Chinese story mentions that the great flood occurred at the end of the reign of Empress Nu Wa (i.e. perhaps a Chinese name for Noah). A Hindu myth describes an alignment of the five brightest planets. According to computer simulations, this has only happened once in the last 5,000 years. Cross-checking historical records with astronomical data, Masse came up with a date for his event: May 10, 2807 B.C. [2].

Charles Berlitz reports that early Jesuit missionaries in China located a 4,320-volume work "compiled by Imperial Edict" and containing "all knowledge." There appears to be an eye witness account from the advantage point of one standing on the earth's surface who saw the flip of the earth by noting, "The sun, moon, and stars changed their motions." The witness may not have been aware that it was the axis of the earth that had changed, not the actual motion of the sun, moon and stars.

> …The Earth was shaken to its foundations. The sky sank lower toward the north. The sun, moon, and stars changed their motions. The Earth fell to pieces and the waters in its bosom rushed upward with violence and overflowed the Earth. Man had rebelled against the high gods and the system of the Universe was in disorder.[3]

The "Epic of Gilgamesh" is claimed to be one of the oldest written historical documents. Its documentation is considered mythology by most, but may have threads of truth. It parallels

---

[1] http://discovermagazine.com/2007/nov/did-a-comet-cause-the-great-flood

[2] http://discovermagazine.com/2007/nov/did-a-comet-cause-the-great-flood

[3] Brown, Walter. ***In the Beginning:, Compelling Evidence for Creation and the Flood****, Seventh Edition,* (Phoenix, AZ: Center For Scientific Creation, 1995),ISBN 1-878026-08-9, pg 107.

the historical documentation of the Genesis Flood in many respects, but diverges in many other respects. In some areas, such as comets or meteoroids, the "Epic of Gilgamesh" speaks, but there is silence on such topics with respect to the Genesis Flood. But the Genesis Flood is also silent with respect to what physically initiated Flood. Therefore, from only a biblical perspective, this is neither an argument for or against comets or meteoroids from the heavens. Therefore, the "Epic of Gilgamesh" implication may be real and historical in suggesting that comets or meteoroids may have caused the Biblical Deluge. It may have been the initial reason for ancient cultures to fear these outerspace objects.

> Ancient cultural legends also played a hand in inspiring a terrible dread of these celestial nomads. ….. "Epic of Gilgamesh," described fire, brimstone, and flood with the arrival of a comet.[1]

In an archeology article titled, *Ancient Stone Tablet Found: Reveals Comet Impact Sparking the Rise of Civilization*, Trevor Nace speaks of archeological evidence at the world's oldest temple - Gobekli Tepe in southern Turkey. It is an ancient observation and worship site dating back to said date of 9,000 B.C. It is said to be 6,000 years older than Stonehenge. There on a stone carving, known as the Vulture Stone, is shown a comet that fragmented, hitting the earth with a headless man that symbolized a catastrophic death of mankind. It is thought to have killed the wooly mammoths and created a new beginning of civilization for mankind.

> The carvings depict various animals corresponding to astronomical constellations. The stone also shows a swarm of comet fragments as they hit Earth and a headless man symbolizing human disaster and death.[2]

---

[1] http://www.nasa.gov/mission_pages/deepimpact/media/f_ancient.html

[2] https://www.forbes.com/sites/trevornace/2017/04/30/ancient-stone-tablet-found-reveals-comet-impact-sparking-the-rise-of-civilization/#7dbadc487342

Perhaps the Vulture Stone does not simply depict a comet that broke up in the earth's atmosphere destroying much of life on earth. Instead, it might be possible to interpret the stone carvings as multiple waves of meteorites striking the earth, destroying all of mankind (except Noah and his family on the Ark) - not by the impact of the meteorites striking the earth, but the result of a cataclysmic Genesis Flood initiated by the meteorite storm event that blasted through our whole solar system.

The Egyptians have a mythology that has features that are very similar the Genesis Flood account, and therefore; give credence to the Flood as a real event. Just as in the biblical text, there are four couples that are part of this flood story. It is "in the "Hermopolitan Ogdoad", a mythical Egyptian cosmology involving eight creator deities, comprising four males and their female consorts." It is found in the oldest Egyptian texts. It was first discovered in the 5th Dynasty Pyramid Text and is later found in the Coffin Texts (funeral spells), Book of the Dead, and Pharaonic temple inscriptions.[1] The 5th Dynasty Pyramids at Saqqara, dated between 2321-2306 BC, are the earliest writings known from Egypt. However, these conventional dates should not be accepted since this places these pyramids' construction at the time of the Flood (2304 BC +/- 11years), assuming the MT timescale.[2] The author of this Egyptian article contends that the ancient Egyptians deified Noah and his family and eventually became part of their mythology. The "father of the gods", "Nu" (phonetically similar to Chinese Empress "Nu Wa") has a similar biblical name of "Noah". In the "Book of Shu", these eight are known as the "eight Chaos-

[1] *Journal of Creation*, Vol. 33(3), 2019, 'The search for Noah and the Flood in ancient Egypt – part 1, by Gavin Cox, ISSN 1036-2916, p. 94.

[2] *Journal of Creation*, Vol. 33(3), 2019, 'The search for Noah and the Flood in ancient Egypt – part 1, by Gavin Cox, ISSN 1036-2916, p. 95.

gods". Shu is the name for the air-god.[1] The responsibility of the eight Heh-gods is to aid Shu in supporting the sky to prevent the cosmos from being destroyed by the Flood. The divine complaint resulting in the Flood judgement is due to moral failure on the par of mankind, described as rebellion (sbi), evil and violence and conceptually parallel to the divine complaint recorded in Genesis 6:5, 11.[2]

> The Egyptians believed the Ogdoad's role was to maintain creation's balance, by stopping the sky from collapsing back into the Nun (the Egyptian idea of a primeval flood), which in Egyptian cosmology was believed to be a state of chaos, from which creation emerged. This is strikingly parallel to the concepts of Creation as revealed in Genesis 1 and also mirrored within the Flood account in the role of the tehÔm – the Great Deep. The names of these gods are written above their heads as cartouches, and are as follows. The chief god called Nu – which is phonetically similar to Noah, Nu's wife is the feminine form – Naunet. The other gods are Heh and Hauhet. Kek and Kauket, and Amon and Amaunet.[3] …. It is my conviction that these male names, Nu Kek, Amun, and Heh, are the equivalent Egyptian religious names of Noah, Ham, Shem, and Japheth (the consort names are merely the feminine forms of the same names).[4]

The Ogdoad Temple, at the City of Eight, was to the worship of the eight was located at the following.

> El-Ashmunein is the Arabic name of a modern city in Upper Egypt, some 322 km south of Cairo which contains an archaeological site that marks a temple where the Ogdoad were worshipped. The El-Ashmunein site was marked by a Greco-

---

[1] *Journal of Creation*, Vol. 33(3), 2019, 'The search for Noah and the Flood in ancient Egypt – part 1, by Gavin Cox, ISSN 1036-2916, p. 99.

[2] *Journal of Creation*, Vol. 33(3), 2019, 'The search for Noah and the Flood in ancient Egypt – part 2, by Gavin Cox, ISSN 1036-2916, p. 104.

[3] *Journal of Creation*, Vol. 33(3), 2019, 'The search for Noah and the Flood in ancient Egypt – part 1, by Gavin Cox, ISSN 1036-2916, p. 97.

- Hornung, E. (Baines, J. trans.), *Conceptions of God in Ancient Egypt: The one and the many*, Ithaca, NY, p. 176, 2002

[4] *Journal of Creation*, Vol. 33(3), 2019, 'The search for Noah and the Flood in ancient Egypt – part 1, by Gavin Cox, ISSN 1036-2916, p. 97.

> Roman temple of Thoth, dedicated to the Ogdoad's worship, itself destroyed in modern times, but archaeologic evidence has shown traces of 18th dynasty foundations laying beneath. [1]

What was the function of the Ogdoad and what was the consequences of man's rebellion?

> The myth of the Heavenly Cow (HC–parenthesis add) is preserved in several versions, dating to the NK (New Kingdom) (c. 1539 – 1077 BC). [2] Of specific interest is the appearance of the eight Heh-gods, who function within the story by assisting Shu in supporting the sky. [3] The eight Heh-gods stop the sky from collapsing, so preventing creation from returning to its original primeval conditions represented by Nun – the embodiment of the Flood. [4] HC describes mankind's rebellion (*sbi*) against Re (chief Egyptian god, god of the sun, death and underworld – parenthesis added), his ordering mankind's destruction, and subsequent ***reorganization of the cosmos*** (emphasis added), before permanently retiring to heaven. [5]

---

[1] *Journal of Creation*, Vol. 33(3), 2019, 'The search for Noah and the Flood in ancient Egypt – part 2, by Gavin Cox, ISSN 1036-2916, p. 105.

[2] *Journal of Creation*, Vol. 33(3), 2019, *'The search for Noah and the Flood in ancient Egypt – part 2'*, by Gavin Cox, ISSN 1036-2916, p. 102.

- Hornung, E., Krauss, R., Krauss, M.E., and Warburton D.A. (Eds.), *Ancient Egyptian Chronology*, Brill, Leiden, p. 492, 2006.

[3] *Journal of Creation*, Vol. 33(3), 2019, *'The search for Noah and the Flood in ancient Egypt – part 2'*, by Gavin Cox, ISSN 1036-2916, p. 102.

- Pinch, G., *Egyptian Mythology: A guide to the gods, goddesses and traditions of the ancient Egypt*, Oxford Press, CA, p. 197, 2002. Shu an air god separated his children earth (son Geb) and sky (daughter, NUT from their embrace. He then held up Nut – an image of creation – keeping the sky from collapsing and returning to Nun. Shu was aided by the eight Heh gods.

[4] *Journal of Creation*, Vol. 33(3), 2019, *'The search for Noah and the Flood in ancient Egypt – part 2'*, by Gavin Cox, ISSN 1036-2916, p. 103.

- Hornung, E., *Der Agyptische Mythos von der Hemmelskuh: Eine Atiologie des Unvollkomm enen*, University of Zurich, Freiburg, pp. 42-43, HC Line 157-168, 1982.

[5] *Journal of Creation*, Vol. 33(3), 2019, 'The search for Noah and the Flood in ancient Egypt – part 2, by Gavin Cox, ISSN 1036-2916, p. 102.

Nearly every culture has their own Flood mythology that strongly suggest that their ancestors were a witness to the earth flip. The Egyptians noted that there was a ***reorganization of the cosmos*** that suggest that the star consolations had changed their place with respect to the a witness on the earth, implying that perhaps it was not the star consolations that had actually reorganized, but the earth that had flipped. The parallels to the Egyptian mythology are too similar to the Genesis Flood for the Genesis Flood not to be a real event. Several similarities are 1. There are eight that were responsible for saving humanity from the flood., 2. The flood was demanded by the chief god for man's rebellion., and 3. Nu, phonetically similar to Noah, was the father of the sons. These are just a few of the common features.

Other Egyptian sources and many other ancient people for other nations also give testimony to an earth flip according to the following excerpts from ***Worlds in Collision***, by Immanuel Velikovsky.[1] Egyptian literacy sources as Magical Papyrus Harris tell of a cosmic upheaval of fire and water when "the south becomes north, and the Earth turns over." Papyrus Ipuwer gives a similar description that "the land turns round [over] as does a potter's wheel" and the "Earth turned upside down." In the tomb of Senmut, the architect of Queen Hatshepsut, a panel on the ceiling shows the celestial sphere with the signs of the zodiac and other constellations in "a reversed orientation" of the southern sky. In the panel, Orion appears west of Sirius instead of east. In ***The Statesman***, Plato wrote, "I mean the change in the rising and the setting of the sun and the other heavenly bodies, how in those times they used to set in the quarter where they now rise, and used to rise where they now set …" Similar descriptions are given by other renown Greeks. "The Chinese say that it is only since a new order of things has

[1] Velikovsky, Immanuel. *Worlds in Collision* (New York, NY: Pocket Books, 1977), ISBN 0-671- 82717-0, pp. 120-126.

come about that the stars move from east to west." "The signs of the Chinese zodiac have the strange peculiarity in proceeding in a retrograde direction, that is against the course of the sun." The Mexican Indians Teotl Lexco noted that the sun that moves toward the east, contrary to the present sun. The Eskimos of Greenland told missionaries that in an ancient time the earth turned over and the people who lived then became antipodes. In the Hebrew Tractate Sanhedrin of the Talmud it said: "Seven days before the deluge, the Holy One changed the primeval order and the sun rose in the west and set in the east."

The story by the Wichita Indian tribe of Oklahoma tell how the earth was re-populated from a few people. Could this be the story of Noah and his seven family members and how the animal came to him from all over? It says that the Deluge, or perhaps the Genesis Flood, came from a specific direction, the north, and covered the entire face of the earth. The story says that they could see Flood coming from the north, this also implies that it came in the form of a sheetflow tsunami over the land (i.e. similarly described by the NU Flood Theory).

> The Wichita, an Indian tribe of Oklahoma, tell the following story of "The Deluge and the Re-peopling of the Earth": "There came to the people some signs, which showed that there was something in the north that looked like clouds; and the fowl of the air came, and the animals of the plains and woods were seen. All of this indicated that something was to happen. The clouds that were seen in the north were a deluge. The deluge was all over the face of the earth.[1]

Years after the Flood, remnant asteroids were most likely caught for a short time by the earth's and moon's gravitational force that caused terror to the ancient civilizations. These asteroids may have acted as very short-term comets that followed the elliptical path of the earth/ moon circling the sun as flies flying around the head of a buzzard. This interplay of the asteroids

---

[1] Velikovsky, Immanuel. *Worlds in Collision* (New York, NY: Pocket Books, 1977), ISBN 0-671-82717-0, pp. 195-196.

that became meteors as they entered the earth's outer stratosphere may have taken on animated likeness to living creatures that became deity to the ancients. The most common motifs of these creatures are dragons, birds, snakes and cows.[1] The dragons, birds and snakes are often shown with very colorful feathers or hair that represent fire coming from these creatures. How might have this come about? The pagan ancients were already terrified knowing that asteroids were likely the initial cause of the Flood. The earth still recovering from the devastation of the Flood, appeared to be transitioning from a premortal state. While God saved a lost world through Noah, the new forming nations did not believe in God but thought of Him as a vengeful and still out to destroy them. When the ancients saw this meteor interplay in the night sky, the meteors would twist and split in the sky as if fireworks from a smoking earth. But these were not small fireworks, but was most likely massive terrifying fireballs that was seen at every location of the earth. As the observers saw the fireball soared away from them, it appeared as a twisting snake, dragon or a fiery bird. As the observers view fiery ball came down toward them on into the earth's atmosphere in a twisting manner, it produced a circular optic glowing ball that produced crescents on left side, then the right side, at a rapid rate. This gave the appearance of two horns coming from the head of the fireball as if it were a charging bull, or dragon with horns coming down from the sky. Notice that all these motifs of other nations are sky creatures even though snakes and cows are not typically thought of as creatures that can fly. The fiery 'dragon' is the motif of far east nations, like China. The twisted fiery 'snake' is known as Quetzalcoatl, a feathered serpent deity worshiped by many different ethnopolitical groups in Mesoamerican history (i.e. Mayans and Aztecs) in Central and South America. It was also known as the Plumed

---

[1] Velikovsky, Immanuel. *Worlds in Collision* (New York, NY: Pocket Books, 1977), ISBN 0-671-82717-0, pp. 91-92, 175.

Serpent, a mix of bird and rattle snake. [1] The Phoenix, in Slavic folklore, is commonly called as just the Firebird and it is seen as a majestic flaming bird that glows in bright red-orange color. It was known in Russian, Ukrainian, Serbian, Croatian, Bulgarian, Macedonian, Polish, Czech, Slovak, Slovene, Chinese, and Israeli. [2] The deity of the cow is known by India in the Hindu faith. It was also known by the Egyptians [3] and surrounding nations, including the wayward Israelites after being led out of Egypt from slavery. Several of these creatures are prominent in the star consolations, including the Zodiac.

As with many mythologies, there may be some truth to them. How do you know what parts of any myth has potential to be true? First, does the piece of information being considered seem logical, or possible. Second, are there reoccurring elements between the myths. Third, does it line up with the Bible? In the Egyptian mythology, there are several elements that line up with the Bible. One of the elements that mentioned in Job 38:12-13 of the Bible, and reoccurring in other mythologies is the idea that there was a "***reorganization of the cosmos*** ". If this were true, how would this be possible? It does not seem logical that the stars would change their physical position. Therefore, the more logical conclusion is that the earth changed its orientation on its axis, perhaps to the extent that it flipped.

[1] https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Quetzalcoatl, https://www.ancient.eu/Quetzalcoatl/

[2] https://www.slavorum.org/legends-and-myths-about-the-phoenix-firebird-in-slavic-culture/

[3] *Journal of Creation*, Vol. 33(3), 2019, *'The search for Noah and the Flood in ancient Egypt – part 2'*, by Gavin Cox, ISSN 1036-2916, p. 102.

- Hornung, E., Krauss, R., Krauss, M.E., and Warburton D.A. (Eds.), *Ancient Egyptian Chronology*, Brill, Leiden, p. 492, 2006.

XXV. Planet X?

Is there any evidence for potential planetoid objects that may have been redirected by our Sun from the Flood event that can be found outside our solar system? In *Scientific America, The Search for Planet X - is it hidden in the solar system's outer reaches?*, Michael D. Lemonick notes that planetary scientists have discovered very strange objects orbiting around our sun.[1] In the 1980s, scientists began to have doubts as to whether Pluto should continue to have the same planetary status as the other eight, given that there were other suspected similar planetoid objects as Pluto in the Kuiper belt region of our solar system. Either Pluto would remain as one of the nine planets with the addition of other Kuiper belt objects (KBO) being added, or it would have to be demoted. In 2006, the International Astronomical Union decided that Pluto should be demoted to a dwarf planet status. In 2003, Sidna was discovered with an orbit so radically different from all other known objects previously known in our solar system. It had an orbit that was not circular, but very elongated. (Nearly all objects in our solar system have an elongated orbit, but not to this extreme.) Sidna was thought to be an icy body about 2,250 kilometers across. It reaches perihelion (closes point to the sun) at 76 AU and 930 AU aphelion (furthest point from the sun) with a 11,400-year orbit. Its perihelion is approximately twice the distance as Neptune is from the sun. One astronomical unit, AU, is the average distance that the earth is from the sun. Over the next decade, another ten other smaller Kuiper objects would be found with strange elongated orbits.

> By itself, this was not especially noteworthy: none of them was nearly as extreme as Sedna either in the shape of its orbit or in how far beyond Neptune its perihelion came - that is, its closest approach to the sun. But all of them, along

[1] Michael D. Lemonick, *Scientific America; The Search for Planet X - is it hidden in the solar system's outer reaches*, February 2016, www.ScientificAmerica.com, pg 30.

with Sedna itself, shared a similar argument of perihelion, the unusual orbital parameter that describes how far above or below the plane of the solar system an object is when it reaches perihelion, and that seemed ...odd.

Things got significantly odder in 2014 when Trujillo and Sheppard announced in *Nature* that they had discovered a second Sedna - like object, about half as big as Sedna itself, after searching for something like it for a decade.[2]

This second KBO discovered is provisionally known as 2012 VP_{113}. It has an orbit of 4,300 years with a perihelion of 80 AU and an aphelion of 446 AU.

Like Sedna, 2012 VP 113 is fully detached from Neptune gravitationally. And crucially, its argument of perihelion is very similar to Sedna's as well as that of a handful of other, less Sedna-like KBOs. It was that last factor that led to a provocative line buried well down in the *Nature* paper. "This suggests," wrote Trujillo and Sheppard, "that a massive outer Solar system perturber may exist." The perturber, they hypothesized, could be a super Earth orbiting up to 250 AU from the sun, whose gravity might have influenced the smaller objects and synchronized their arguments of perihelion. [1]

This "super Earth" planet that is thought to be the 'perturber' of KBO became known as "Planet X".

Like most KBOs, they orbit at an angle to the pancake-shaped plane where the planets live, rising above the pancake for part of the time, then plunging through to dip below for the rest. But unlike their frozen brethren, these objects all pass through the planetary plane at the same time (known as 'arguments of perihelion', AOP) that they make their closest swing toward the sun (parenthesis added) . [2]

---

[2] Michael D. Lemonick, *Scientific America; The Search for Planet X - is it hidden in the solar system's outer reaches*, February 2016, www.ScientificAmerica.com, pg 30.

[1] Michael D. Lemonick, *Scientific America; The Search for Planet X - is it hidden in the solar system's outer reaches*, February 2016, www.ScientificAmerica.com, pg 30.

[2] Michael D. Lemonick, *Scientific America; The Search for Planet X - is it hidden in the solar system's outer reaches*, February 2016, www.ScientificAmerica.com, pg 30.

Scott Sheppard, a planetary scientist at the Carnegie Institution for Science, said, "Normally, you would expect the arguments of perihelion to have been randomized over the life of the solar system." He noted that the pure chance of such an event should only be within a few percent of the time. He compares it to getting heads 10 times in a row. Therefore, he concluded that perhaps the coin must be quote 'loaded'.

> Something may have forced the objects into this strange configuration - and that something could be a huge, unknown planet, significantly more massive than Earth, lurking out at the edge of the solar system: a super Earth. [1]

Two Spanish astronomers, both brothers, Raul and Carlos de la Fuente Marcos of the Complutense University of Madrid, argued that there might be more than one super Earth. Raul says,

> "Our unpublished calculations, suggest that the hypothetical planets should be at least two, but probably fewer than 15, Earth masses.".[2]

It was quoted in this scientific article that,

> "It may be that we do not know our solar system nearly as well as we thought we did. If there is a Planet X out there, it will necessitate a wholesale rewriting of some key chapters of the solar system's history".[3]

In the end, the Scientific America concludes,

> With no more than 12 unusual objects to guide them, planetary scientists cannot say at this point whether our solar system is host to a super Earth or not. They can say only that the hypothesis is consistent with the observations.[4]

---

[1] Michael D. Lemonick, *Scientific America; The Search for Planet X - is it hidden in the solar system's outer reaches*, February 2016, www.ScientificAmerica.com, pg 30.

[2] Michael D. Lemonick, *Scientific America; The Search for Planet X - is it hidden in the solar system's outer reaches*, February 2016, www.ScientificAmerica.com, pg 30.

[3] Michael D. Lemonick, *Scientific America; The Search for Planet X - is it hidden in the solar system's outer reaches*, February 2016, www.ScientificAmerica.com, pg 30.

Science.com concludes that not only was the Kieper Belt perturbed by Planet X, or Planet Nine, but also every planet of our solar system was perturbed by Planet X by six degrees relative to the equatorial plane of our sun.

> Now, researchers suggest that Planet Nine's influence might have tilted the entire solar system except the sun.
>
> "Planet Nine may have tilted the other planets over the lifetime of the solar system," said study lead author Elizabeth Bailey, an astrophysicist and planetary scientist at the California Institute of Technology in Pasadena.
>
> Prior work found that the zone in which the eight major planets orbit the sun is tilted by about 6 degrees compared to the sun's equator. This discrepancy has long been a mystery in astronomy. [1]

Neither Scientific America nor Science.com scientific articles acknowledge that there may be some other explanations for the Kuiper belt objects oblong orbits or the tilted solar system other than the Super Earth hypothesis.

Is Planet X the best explanation, or could there be another that considers these given factors? What could have been this great 'perturber' that disrupted these small planetoids or the tilted solar system? Perhaps there is a much better explanation, other than pure chance, to these strange KBOs with long oblong orbits and similar arguments of perihelion. Also, illustrated but not explicitly stated is that eleven out of twelve of the KBOs perihelions are on one side. Each of these KBOs cut through the plane of our solar system at the same angle. How can this

---

[4] Michael D. Lemonick, *Scientific America; The Search for Planet X - is it hidden in the solar system's outer reaches*, February 2016, www.ScientificAmerica.com, pg 30.

[1] https://www.space.com/34448-planet-nine-solar-system-tilt.html
https://www.newscientist.com/article/2098029-planet-nine-may-have-tilted-entire-solar-system-except-the-sun/

possibly be coincidental? It must have resulted from a single event that occurred not so long ago, since these planetoids still have the same argument of perihelion that should have dissipated over the distant past, if it had happened eons ago.

Planet X is thrown out there as a reasonable possibility. But the Spanish brothers noted that their calculations show that there must be 'multiple super Earth perturbers'. What if these 'multiple super Earth perturbers' were not super planets at all! What if, instead; they are the result of an asteroid storm that blasted through our solar system not so long ago - say at the time of the Genesis Flood. Two different orbits of 4,300 years and 11,400-year were given that are within the tolerance to make both of these KBOs candidates which may have been the result of the Genesis Flood event. Given that all of these KBOs appear to have the same argument of perihelion, this makes the other mentioned KBOs potential candidates as well. This would fit the same physical effect criteria of a 'multiple super Earth perturber' without it literally being multiple sources of super Earths. If this were the case, the angle that these KBOs cut through the plane of our solar system may very well be the direction of the blast of the multiple waves of the asteroid blasted through the plane of our solar system which flipped the earth and perhaps other planets and their moons. As the asteroid shot through our solar system, its collective gravitational force must have pulled a lot of space debris with it. Some of it may have gotten hung up around our sun to form the Kuiper Belt, Asteroid Belt, or to become moons to our four largest planets. Some of this space debris became these strange KBOs cutting an oblong plane of debris through our solar system. This was a significant perturbing event that occurred over a short period of time in the age of man - at the time of Noah. The gravitational influence of the catastrophic asteroid blast through our entire solar system may have very well tilted our entire plane or all our planets by six degrees relative to our sun's equator. Most of the remnant of these

asteroids are now long gone so as to have very few asteroid remaining to have been captured by our planets or our sun. This may explain why there might not be a Planet X, or multiple Planet Xs, found or to be found. This author does not believe that Planet X will be found. But if a Planet X is found, it does not necessarily diminish the NU Flood Theory any more than if a Planet X were never found proves NU Flood Theory. But Kepler objects evidence that is accompanied with a high mathematical probability gives supports to the NU Flood Theory that there was an asteroid blast that went through our entire solar system and that a very few of these objects may have been loosely captured by our sun. If true, "...it will necessitate a wholesale rewriting of some key chapters of the solar system's history." [1]

XXVI. Catastrophic Plate Tectonics in Question

Dr. Tim Clarey recently has written a defining book called *Carved in Stone, Geological Evidence of the Worldwide Flood* which gives very compelling evidence for the Genesis Flood by demonstrating the reality of six megasequences across multiple continents across North America, South America and Africa as well as other strong, supporting evidences. This author was very grateful to Dr. Clarey's and has referenced to much of his work. But, as many creation scientists of the day, his work was under the framework of Catastrophic Plate Tectonics Flood, CPT, with similar tenants of the Plate Tectonic theory tectonic where plates being created and destroyed.

> Plate tectonics, and in particular CPT, is well documented, working model that provides a Flood mechanism independent of a patchwork of repeated

[1] Michael D. Lemonick, *Scientific America; The Search for Planet X - is it hidden in the solar system's outer reaches*, February 2016, www.ScientificAmerica.com, pg 30

miracles. It serves as a framework to explain much of the geological data that has been collected for hundreds of years. [1]

Catastrophic Plate Tectonics Flood, like Plate Tectonics, explains many geographic earth features. Just as Plate Tectonics is the most accepted tectonic theory with most secular scientist, the CPT theory is the most accepted tectonic theory among creation scientists that attempts to explain all the geographical features of the earth by the processes of the Genesis Flood. The CPT is like Plate Tectonics in that the subduction of the lithosphere have subducted under another overlying lithosphere. CPT pre-Flood super-continental layout is very similar to Plate Tectonics layout. [2] The CPT primary difference with Plate Tectonics is the support of rapid subduction of the lithosphere as a result of solely "gravitational potential energy" due to a once original denser ocean that had subducted in months, not millions of years. [3] It is said that the subducting lithospheric plates extruded to the surface spitting the continents in equal parts forming the mid-oceanic ridge. [4]

The CPT is a Flood creation model that explains how the coastlines might have been flooded. It explains the fountains of the deep, gravity subduction, rapid plate tectonics, seafloor spreading, magnetic anomalies, and the Ice Age. [5] But with all models, it comes with some

---

1 *Journal of Creation*, Vol. 30(1), 2016, *Empirical data support seafloor spreading and catastrophic plate tectonics*, by Timothy L. Clarey, ISSN 1036-2916, p. 77.

2 Timothy Clarey, *CARVED IN STONE, Geological Evidence of the Worldwide Flood*, (first printing March 2020), Institute for Creation Research, P.O. Box 59029, Dallas, TX 75229, ISBN 978-1-946246-25-7, pg. 153, 178.

3 Timothy Clarey, *CARVED IN STONE, Geological Evidence of the Worldwide Flood*, (first printing March 2020), Institute for Creation Research, P.O. Box 59029, Dallas, TX 75229, ISBN 978-1-946246-25-7, pg. 159.

4 Timothy Clarey, *CARVED IN STONE, Geological Evidence of the Worldwide Flood*, (first printing March 2020), Institute for Creation Research, P.O. Box 59029, Dallas, TX 75229, ISBN 978-1-946246-25-7, pg. 143.

5 Timothy Clarey, *CARVED IN STONE, Geological Evidence of the Worldwide Flood*, (first printing March 2020), Institute for Creation Research, P.O. Box 59029, Dallas, TX 75229, ISBN 978-1-946246-25-7, pg. 132-150.

inherent difficulties. The theory began with the subduction the lithospheric plates, 100 km (62 mi.) thick original ocean floor, that simultaneously form the mid-oceanic ridge where new ocean lithosphere. According to Dr. Baumgardner's CPT accepted Flood model, the original ocean floor lithosphere must have been denser in order to initially subduct into the mantle.[1] As it begins to subduct, the silicane rock began to weaken by magnitudes of ten times and began to melt in front of the subduction movement, accelerating downward. The rate of the subduction is said to be meters/second into the mantle. This in turn, is said to result in magma expelling to the surface forming the mid-oceanic ridge. The original ocean lithospheric plate is said to have settled between the earth's inner core and the outer core. The outpouring of magma along the mid-oceanic ridge replaced the original lithosphere with a less dense lithosphere partial melt from the mantle of similar depth. Its lighter density eruption created tsunami flood waves toward land giving the mechanism for the Genesis Flood.[2]

The Catastrophic Plate Tectonics, CPT, flood model suffers many of the same flaws as does the Plate Tectonics theory. The similar fatal faults between CPT and Plate Tectonics will not be discussed here since it has already been previously discussed in Part 2. The following are some of the problems particular to CPT. The first is that the sudden subduction must occur simultaneously with the existence of the mid-oceanic ridge, such that, "Without a long, linear crack in the lithosphere, subduction cannot initiate".[3] And when it does occur, it just happens be

---

1 Timothy Clarey, *CARVED IN STONE, Geological Evidence of the Worldwide Flood,* (first printing March 2020), Institute for Creation Research, P.O. Box 59029, Dallas, TX 75229, ISBN 978-1-946246-25-7, pg. 134.

2 Timothy Clarey, *CARVED IN STONE, Geological Evidence of the Worldwide Flood,* (first printing March 2020), Institute for Creation Research, P.O. Box 59029, Dallas, TX 75229, ISBN 978-1-946246-25-7, pg. 134, 143 & 315.

3 Timothy Clarey, *CARVED IN STONE, Geological Evidence of the Worldwide Flood,* (first printing March 2020), Institute for Creation Research, P.O. Box 59029, Dallas, TX 75229, ISBN 978-1-946246-25-7, pg. 143.

equally between the split continents. To consider how to better appreciate the mechanism of how the subduction and the mid-oceanic ridge works, consider the illustration of a round tablecloth slightly hanging over a round table. If the tablecloth was centered on the table, the tablecloth would not slide off the table. If the tablecloth was sliced down the middle (i.e. mid-oceanic ridge) and the lack of friction allows, the gravity will allow the overhanging tablecloth (i.e. subducting ocean floor) to fall off the table on either side. Therefore, both the subduction and the mid-oceanic ridge must be taking place at the same for this to be a viable option. [1] The difference between this illustration and reality is that the actual original ocean lithosphere was solid rock sixty-two miles thick covering hundreds of thousands of square miles that most likely did not subduct at ninety degrees but approximately forty-five degrees supported by the upper mantle. To even begin the "runaway subduction" process, there had to have been a substantial amount of subduction overhang to have enough "pull". A denser lithosphere would not easily slide over the asthenosphere, the upper mantle, having a to overcome much friction. If the lithosphere were to subduct due to gravity, then it had to be pulling on the sixty-two-mile depth dense brittle rock plate that performs very poorly in tension (Remember that the mid-oceanic ridge shows obvious normal tension cracks along its centerline making this option almost nil from the very start – see Fig. 6). If at any point a fracture would develop at the crest of the bend, the gravity would no longer be able to pull the remaining slab downward, losing its pull mechanism of subduction. (In the CPT, the role of the asthenosphere, approximately 100 km to 660 km (60 mi. to 340 mi) depth, appears to be the sphere that the lithosphere that carried the continents, 100 km (60 mi.), drifted over. In the Plate Tectonic theory, the asthenosphere is said to have drifted, but also

[1] Timothy Clarey, *CARVED IN STONE, Geological Evidence of the Worldwide Flood,* (first printing March 2020), Institute for Creation Research, P.O. Box 59029, Dallas, TX 75229, ISBN 978-1-946246-25-7, pg. 143.

subducted with the lithosphere. In either case, there appears to be no confidence in any known mechanism that is said to have moved the lithosphere – mantle convection in particular.) [1]

Another problem is that the original oceanic lithosphere is said to be denser than the current oceanic lithosphere. Dr. John Baumgardner , one of the first leading proponent of CPT who has created a Flood model computer, who's general findings of the pre-Flood were, "pre-Flood seafloor was thought to be completely destroyed during the year-long event and rapidly replaced with today's young igneous ocean crust." [2] Therefore, there was no rock or pebble that any CPT scientist can claim that was dense enough that was the original ocean rock that was required according to Dr. Baumgardner's CPT accepted Flood model! It was said that all sixty-two miles lithosphere depth was completely subducted. Should there not be some evidence of this denser original ocean floor? There should have been some original rock scrape off on the edge of the continent border by the process of accretion forming escarpments at continental edges as it began to bend down to the mantle under the continental shelf. Even if it was assumed that all sixty-two miles was completely subducted to the inner/outer core boundary, new hot magma lithosphere, say also sixty-two miles depth, would have directly followed behind and replaced the cold original rock lithosphere beyond the mantle transition zone. In this case, the said subduction of the lithosphere in the tomography illustration (Fig. 46) should have been shown as a hue of orange to red, but instead; it was shown as light to dark blue. In fact, this dark blue band was shown from the top ocean floor surface to the mantle transition zone where it was abruptly stopped. This included the top layer of the current ocean lithosphere before it was bent

[1] Timothy Clarey, *CARVED IN STONE, Geological Evidence of the Worldwide Flood,* (first printing March 2020), Institute for Creation Research, P.O. Box 59029, Dallas, TX 75229, ISBN 978-1-946246-25-7, pg. 132.

[2] Timothy Clarey, *CARVED IN STONE, Geological Evidence of the Worldwide Flood,* (first printing March 2020), Institute for Creation Research, P.O. Box 59029, Dallas, TX 75229, ISBN 978-1-946246-25-7, pg. 134.

down. If CPT was going to make the claim that this was the original cold plate subduction at nearly 700 km, then they also needed to make the claim that the original ocean floor did not break through the mantle transition zone, given that the dark blue hue continuously extended from the earth's surface to only the mantle transition zone. We should then also conclude that it was the same original tectonic plate at the surface. Therefore, we should find endless samples of the original denser ocean lithosphere floor at the surface, but none has yet to be found. Otherwise, this must have been an extension of the new existing 62-mile depth ocean lithosphere floor that had immediately followed the original denser ocean floor that has not yet come to a temperature equilibrium. Therefore, this new lava ocean floor which was thought to have subducted shown in the tomography illustration should have been shown in the orange/red hue, not blue color. [1] A 62-mile depth lava should still have remained warmer than the surround mantle since the magma was said to have come from the outer core of the earth and traveled meters-per-second[2] over the surface of the ocean floor with little time to cool down. As noted by Dr. Tim Clarey, it could not have been old earth Plate Tectonics, since all the mantle should have become the same temperature over millions of years. Therefore, we should ask whether this blue downturn was really subduction, or some other explanation. [3]

Also, if volcanoes are the result of melting as the lithospheric plates subduction occurred under an adjacent lithospheric plate, there should have been massive melting plumes that were

---

1 Timothy Clarey, *CARVED IN STONE, Geological Evidence of the Worldwide Flood,* (first printing March 2020), Institute for Creation Research, P.O. Box 59029, Dallas, TX 75229, ISBN 978-1-946246-25-7, pg. 134.

2 Timothy Clarey, *CARVED IN STONE, Geological Evidence of the Worldwide Flood,* (first printing March 2020), Institute for Creation Research, P.O. Box 59029, Dallas, TX 75229, ISBN 978-1-946246-25-7, pg. 134.

3 Timothy Clarey, *CARVED IN STONE, Geological Evidence of the Worldwide Flood,* (first printing March 2020), Institute for Creation Research, P.O. Box 59029, Dallas, TX 75229, ISBN 978-1-946246-25-7, pg. 140.

easily visible coming directly off the top of the top surface of the Wadati-Benioff zones where dykes directly connected to the surface in the formation of volcanoes. Instead, the tomography illustration has shown the said subduction zone as dark blue, surrounded by lighter blue trim, then green trim. This indicated that there has not been heat emanating from the Wadati-Benioff zones for a long time. But instead, the surrounding mantle has been losing its heat to the said subduction zone. The heat zone appears to have been mostly in the upper surface triangular zone at where the said accretion zone was said to have been taken place. Something seems to have been missing here!

> ….modern seismic tomography data confirm runaway subduction happened just thousands of years ago. The internal images of the mantle (tomography) show visible lithospheric slabs of oceanic lithospheric slabs of oceanic crust going down hundreds of miles beneath ocean trenches and into subduction zones. Some of these now seem to extend to the top of the outer core. These are not merely faults, as some have proposed, but 62-mile-thick slabs of brittle, dense rock descending into the mantle. The cooler temperatures exhibited by these subducted slabs of rock create a thermal dilemma for the secular and old-earth geologist, who must demonstrate how these slabs remained cold for millions of years. Colder, subducted slabs are best explained by runaway subduction just thousands of years ago during the great Flood. [1]

On the other hand, the NU Flood Theory should show a dipping blue hue from the ocean floor surface to the transition zone, but not deeper, since this is not a subduction zone that makes up the Ring of Fire, but the fill of an extremely deep fractured abyss zone. The fracture zone formed behind the 'focal impaction' zone that occurred behind the sediment tsunami movement that came to a halt as it densified, dewatered, and compressed like a rubber door stop that slid for a distance before it finally collapsed and jammed before finally coming to a stop. The massive fracture zone formed behind the sediment tsunami movement because the tsunami became more densified as it became "door jammed".

---

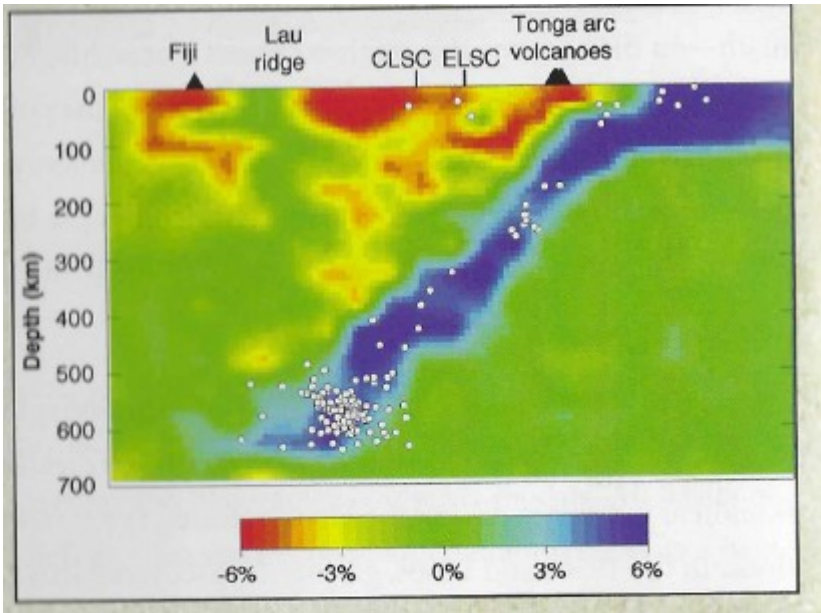
[1] Timothy Clarey, *CARVED IN STONE, Geological Evidence of the Worldwide Flood,* (first printing March 2020), Institute for Creation Research, P.O. Box 59029, Dallas, TX 75229, ISBN 978-1-946246-25-7, pg. 140.

This means that the denser tsunami had a greater momentum, and therefore: a slight, greater velocity than the ocean floor and mantle behind it during the flip of the earth. This is similar to the physics experiment of releasing two spheres of equal diameter but different density simultaneously traveling down a ramp. The sphere with the higher density and greater momentum will reach the bottom of the ramp first. In a similar way, the higher tsunami density and greater momentum will travel further during the flip of the earth than the less dense magma traveling behind the tsunami movement. This difference in momentum due to density resulted in a spread, or difference in distance or a chasm, that formed immediately behind this movement forming the massive fracture abyss zone that has become known as the Ring of Fire. This 435-mile depth fracture zone was immediately filled in by ocean water, sediment, magma that pour out of the abyss walls and the pursuing lava and that had already covered the ocean floor surface. This fracture infilling lithified, but was less dense and remained cooler than the surrounding mantle at depth, despite the inflow of magma. (Fig. 46)

In the tomography illustration (Fig. 46), the 'focal impaction' zone is the triangular zone illustrated with orange/red temperature gradient shown to the left side of the abyss zone (i.e. the said subduction zone) where volcanoes are shown to have poke through the surface (Fig. 32 thru 35) . This was where the ocean floor tsunami had come to a sudden stop to formed a more densified escarpment in a similar manner as a 'door jam' might slide on the floor for a distance before it collapses as it comes to a stop, preventing any further movement of the door. This created an impaction from the stopping of the escarpment wake, directly in front of its movement forming a 'focal impaction' zone just above the Wadati-Benioff zones. This impact zone created much heat and dewatering in this triangular zone allowing magma to escape to the surface to form volcanoes along the tsunami escarpment ridge peaks. The yellow/orange/red hews illustrating higher density and compact zone with higher than normal temperatures that dissipates to the left. This higher impact area of higher density moved a slightly

further distance and slightly rotated in the direction of its movement from the less dense lower right side of the escarpment, leaving a deep fracture to the mantle transition zone depths.

The higher temperatures and greater earthquakes in the upper 100 km (62 mi.) were also a result of the impact the 'focal impaction' zone. In time, the earth had come to equilibrium, the densified earth had become less densified. As the ocean floor and the upper mantle came to an equilibrium going from a dense state to a less dense state, massive energy would be released as fractures on a grand scale (i.e. similar to ice cracking), resulting in earthquakes. Note that no earthquakes are shown to the right of the abyss zone. The abyss zone and lithosphere to the right of the abyss zone remained cooler temperature relative to the base temperature.



P-wave tomography under the Tonga Trench, Pacific Ocean. The blue shows the colder ocean lithosphere descending into the mantle to a depth of nearly 700 km (435 miles). The white dots represent earthquake foci.

- See the below Footnote [1]

Fig. 46

Large negative gravity anomaly was discovered over the ocean trenches which still has not been adequately explained. The only possible explanation for this mystery was that it had too little mass or less measured gravity over the said subduction zone. This literally means that you weigh less standing on a weight scale over the ocean trenches. The explanation that Plate Tectonic theory was that since the lithosphere was subducting, then the missing gravity must be due to the downward subduction movement of the ocean lithosphere. On the flip side, the greater the mass, such as island mountains (i.e. Hawaiian Islands), the greater the pull of water toward them raising the water by 80 feet!

> In 1983, a radar altimeter on the U.S. Navy's SEASAT satellite measured the satellite's distance above the ocean surface with an accuracy of several inches! "Sea level" is far from level. Instead, the ocean surface "humps up" over mountains on the ocean floor and is depressed over trenches. The gravitational attraction of the Hawaiian Islands, for example, pulls the surrounding water toward them, raising sea level there about 80 feet higher than it otherwise would be. [2]

> Geophysical data provide important clues concerning the origin of trenches. No abnormalities in the flow of internal Earth heat or variations in the Earth's magnetic field occur at trenches. Precision measurements reveal that the force of gravity generally is lower than normal, however. These negative gravity anomalies are interpreted to mean that the segments of the lithosphere (that is, the

---

[1] Timothy Clarey, *CARVED IN STONE, Geological Evidence of the Worldwide Flood,* (first printing March 2020), Institute for Creation Research, P.O. Box 59029, Dallas, TX 75229, ISBN 978-1-946246-25-7, pg. 140. **(Copyright Not Approved!)**

[2] Brown, Walter, *In the Beginning:, Compelling Evidence for Creation and the Flood,* Center for Scientific Creation

http://www.creationscience.com/onlinebook/HydroplateOverview2.html
The Hydroplate Theory: An Overview

> crust and upper mantle comprising the rigid, outermost shell of the Earth) that underlie trenches are being forced down against buoyant isostatic forces.[1]

This gravity anomaly having less measurable gravity than expected may be difficult for some to believe, but it is a real phenomenon. Advocates of Plate Tectonics, aware of this phenomenon, simply believed so strongly in subduction of the lithospheric plates moving at inch-per-year give the reason as a 'weightless feeling' – but they are without any scientific merit and have no other explanation. The assumption was that all the upper mantle was approximately made up of the same mantle material having the same density, including the subducting ocean floor at the trenches. The fallacy of this argument was the following. The two components in consideration are mass and acceleration. If one were to ride on an elevator standing on a scale as it went up, the scale weighing your effective mass would read that you were heavier than you actually were since the scale was not only measuring the gravity pull of the earth, but also the additional acceleration of you with the elevator against the earth's gravity. In a similar way, if one were to ride on an elevator standing on a scale as it went down, the scale would read that you were lighter than you actually were since the scale was not only measuring the gravity pull of the earth, but it excludes the acceleration of you with the falling elevator traveling in the direction of the earth's gravity. When considering this physics illustration, the weight scale does not change appreciably due to any downward settlement that may have occurred in the building over the years that it existed. This was an example of weight scale measurement of less apparent gravity, but not less mass. In the same way, the scales would not measure any difference of less gravity over the ocean trench zone, even if we did assume that the ocean lithosphere actually did subduct inches per year into the ocean floor, since like the building's settlement illustration, the

[1] *Deep-sea trench*, The Editors of Encyclopaedia Britannica https://www.britannica.com/place/Indian-Ocean/Seamounts#ref150251

downward (settlement) acceleration of the lithosphere is extremely minimal, and therefore; would not be able to be measured. Therefore, there must be another physical reason for this trench gravity anomaly.

The NU Upheaval Theory gives sound explanation for this trench gravity anomaly. The NU Upheaval Theory makes the case that the ocean trenches were actually extremely deep abysses filled with a very light mass, relative to its surrounding, that extend down just above the 700 km (435 mi.) depth to the mantle transition zone. This theory does not contend that a dense lithosphere subduction sheet of similar or greater density to the surrounding lithosphere and asthenosphere as does Plate Tectonic advocates. The abysses immediately filled following the occurrence of the abyss which was derived from the massive momentums of ocean floor tsunami that was than filled by cascading of magma, continental sediment, and ocean water following the cascading of the new lava ocean floor tsunami toward land in the first hours of the Flood. The result of this was also the outpouring of magma from the instant decompression of fractured vertical walls the mantle to its transition zone. Lighter, dense mass debris filled all the way down to the bottom of mantle transition zone which was much cooler in temperature relative to the surrounding lithosphere/asthenosphere. Therefore, the ocean floor abyss filled from the pouring in of magma, ocean water, and sediment was much less dense and cooler than its surrounding at depth resulting in a negative gravity anomaly.

> Today, most of the Earth's crust is vertically balanced, like blocks of ice floating in a pan of water. Less dense blocks "float" higher up than denser blocks. This is called isostatic equilibrium. However, ocean trenches are Earth's most glaring departure from this equilibrium. This imbalance may be an important clue for how trenches formed. … (If you want to show a slight weight loss, weigh yourself while sailing over a trench.)
>
> As various authorities have written:

> ... trenches are characterized by large negative gravity anomalies. That is, there appears to be a mass deficiency beneath the trenches, and thus something must be holding the trenches down or else they would rise in order to restore isostatic equilibrium.
>
> The most striking phenomenon associated with the trenches is a deficiency in gravity ... Measurements of gravity near trenches show pronounced departures from the expected values. These gravity anomalies are among the largest found on Earth. It is clear that isostatic equilibrium does not exist near the trenches. Trench-producing forces must be acting ... to pull the crust under the trenches downward! [1]

Dr. Tim Clarey made the statement, "These are not merely faults, as some have proposed, but 62-mile-thick slabs of brittle, dense rock descending into the mantle." In regards to the first part of the statement, the NU Flood Theory author was not the first to propose the idea that the Wadati-Benioff zones were actually fracture zones, not subduction zones. Dr. Walter Brown has proposed fracture zones as an explanation for trenches in the Pacific Ocean. [2] In regards to the second part of the statement, it may not be correct that the dipping blue zone was a denser zone simply because it was cooler, and therefore; evidence of a subduction zone. Quite the contrary when one considers that trenches were characterized by large negative gravity anomalies.

Dr. Tim Clarey noted that the catastrophic plates moved at meters-per-second, but the rate was not given. Dr. Tim Clarey notes that during the Tejas Magasequence, that the lithospheric plates were traveling to their final destination with still one-third to one-half of its journey to go over 164 days (i.e. 150th day to 314th day from the start of the Flood). Dr.

---

[1] Brown, Walter, *In the Beginning:, Compelling Evidence for Creation and the Flood,* Center for Scientific Creation

- http://www.creationscience.com/onlinebook/Trenches2.html
  The Origin of Ocean Trenches, Earthquakes, and the Ring of Fire

[2] Brown, Walter, *In the Beginning:, Compelling Evidence for Creation and the Flood,* Center for Scientific Creation

- http://www.creationscience.com/onlinebook/Trenches2.html
  The Origin of Ocean Trenches, Earthquakes, and the Ring of Fire

Andrew Snelling, one of the founding advocates of Plate Tectonics, had determined that the plates moved at approximately 62 mph (100 km/h). in an earlier article. If a plate traveled 1,500 miles (i.e. half the width of the Atlantic Ocean), it would have arrived in twenty-four hour at the continental edge. If the plates traveled too slowly, it would not have enough kinetic energy to overcome the friction due to gravity and would come to a stop. Even if it were one-tenth of this value (i.e. 6.2 mph) were considered the minimum possible rate to overcome friction, it would have only taken ten days to move 1,500 miles. Dr. Tim Clarey notes that during the Tejas Magasequence, that the lithospheric plates were traveling to their final destination with still one-third to one-half of its journey over 164 days [i.e. say 750 miles (half of 1,500 miles) over 150th day to 314th day from the start of the Flood]. This calculates to be less than 0.2 mph for just the Tejas Magasequence! The average walking pace is three to four mph.[1] This does not include the months involving the plate movement during the other megasequences. It is difficult to perceive how at this rate the 62 mile depth lithosphere was able to maintain its kinetic energy to overcoming friction. This is important to note, since Catastrophic Plate Tectonic advocates make the claim that the plates took months to travel, converging into other continental plates to form most of today's mountains long after the 150th of the Flood.

> Dr. Tim Clarey noted,
>
> Geologically, the Tejas shows that significant plate activity was occurring right up until the end of the megasequence. In fact, about one-third to one-half of the ocean crust (depending on the ocean) formed during the deposition of the Tejas Magasequence. This means that seafloor spreading and runway subduction were still traveling at meters per second with no sign of stopping until the end of the Tajas, or close to the level of the Pliocene. So, if the fountains of the deep are referring to rifting and plate activity, then they were not stopped until closer to Day 314 of the Flood year.[2]

---

[1] https://www.healthline.com/health/exercise-fitness/average-walking-speed

- What Is the Average Walking Speed of an Adult? (Healthline)

[2] Timothy Clarey, *CARVED IN STONE, Geological Evidence of the Worldwide Flood,* (first printing March 2020), Institute for Creation Research, P.O. Box 59029, Dallas, TX

Dr. Andrew Snelling claimed,

> Moreover, whether at the current rate of movement—only 4 in (10 cm) per year—the force and energy of the collision between the Indian-Australian and Eurasian Plates could have been sufficient to push up the Himalayas (like two cars colliding, each only traveling at .04 in/h [1 mm/h]) is questionable. In contrast, if the plate movements were measured as feet-per-second, like two cars each traveling at ***62 mph (100 km/h)***, the resulting catastrophic collision would have rapidly buckled rock strata to push up those high mountains.[3] (emphasis added)

Catastrophic Plate Tectonic explanation for the direction of the Flood over the continents from the mid-oceanic ridge are as follows.

> After its formation at the ridges (added, mid-oceanic ridge), the freshly-formed, low-density oceanic lithosphere simply pushed the top of the seafloor up from below, displacing ocean water and forcing it onto the land. …Rapid movement of the plates during runaway subduction further supplied tsunami-like waves to wash across the surfaces, helping to deposit blanket-type sediments across continents.[1]

In the CPT model for much of its Flood event, the direction that the Floodwaters and its sediments load, in large part, came from the mid-oceanic ridge. Therefore, the Atlantic Mid-Oceanic ridge should have been a large source of sediment for the east coast of North America and South America and for the west coast of Europe and Africa. But according to the Six Megasequence for North America (Fig. 47) and Europe (Fig. 48), it is very clear that the sequences came from the north as each following sequence, each sequence having greater

---

75229, ISBN 978-1-946246-25-7, pg. 313-314.

[3] *Can Catastrophic Plate Tectonics Explain Flood Geology?* By Dr. Andrew Snelling, 2007 & 2014

https://answersingenesis.org/geology/plate-tectonics/can-catastrophic-plate-tectonics-explain-flood-geology/

[1] *Journal of Creation*, Vol. 30(1), 2016, *Empirical data support seafloor spreading and catastrophic plate tectonics*, by Timothy L. Clarey, ISSN 1036-2916, p. 81.

volume then the previous (with possible exception of the Tejas Megasequence), extended its limits in the direction of the Floodwaters.

In the NU Flood Theory model, the first three-fifth of the said Geological Column sediment load came from the north due to the flip of the earth. Toward the end of the Flood stage as the continents came to a stop and mountains were formed, the Atlantic Mid-Oceanic Ridge began to rise, the Floodwaters came from the mid-oceanic ridge and eventually from the south. Megasequence diagrams (Fig. 47 & 48) makes the case that all six megasequences came from the north over North America and Europe.

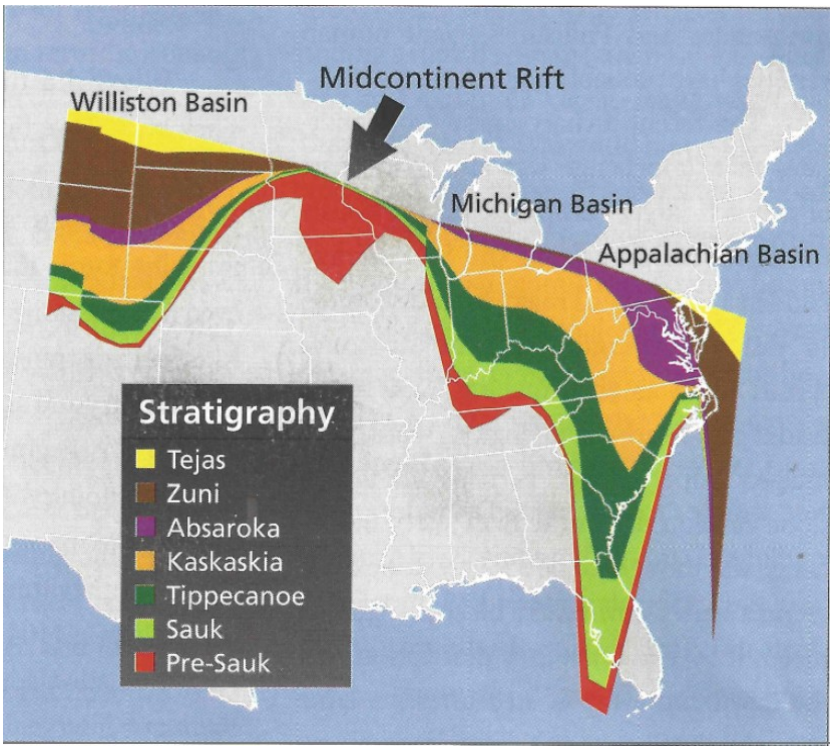
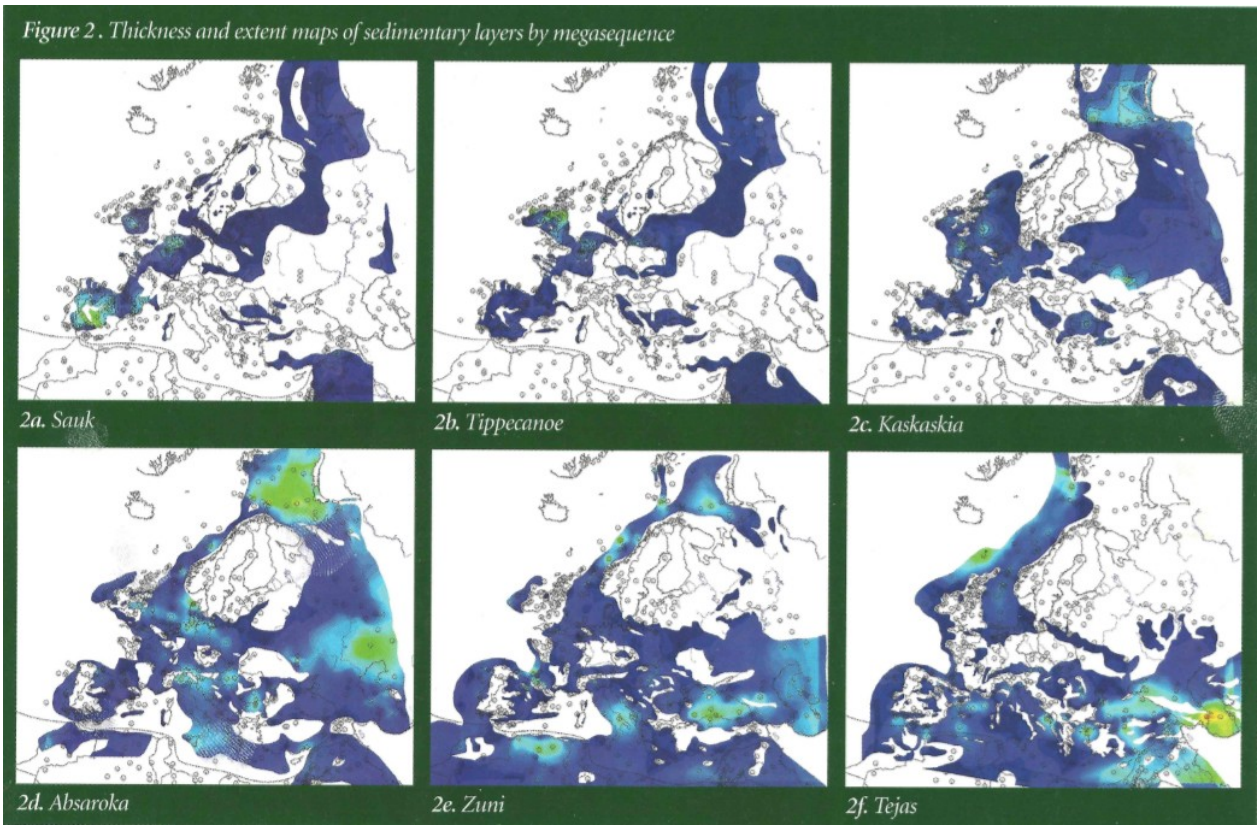


Fig. 47 (same as Fig. 37)
Six megasequences over North America

Six megasequences are shown over North America. Each megasequences collectively is shown to have come from the north in the form of massive tsunami sheetflows.

- See footnote. [1]

[1] Acts & Facts, Institute for Creation Research, *Fountains of the Deep,* by Dr. Tim Clarey, Ph.d,. Vol. 43, No. 12, December 2014, pg. 16
- Morris, J. D. 2012, *The Global Flood: Unlocking Earth'Geologic History*, Dallas, TX: Institute for Creation Research. - **NOT Approved!**



- See footnote. [1]

Fig. 48 (same as Fig. 38)
Six megasequences over Europe

Six Megasequences are shown over Europe. Each megasequences collectively is shown to have come from the north in the form of massive tsunami sheetflows.

[1] Acts & Facts, Institute for Creation Research, *A Rock-Based Global Sea Level,* by Dr. Tim Clarey, Ph.d,. Vol. 48, No. 12, December 2019, pg. 10-12. - **NOT Approved!**

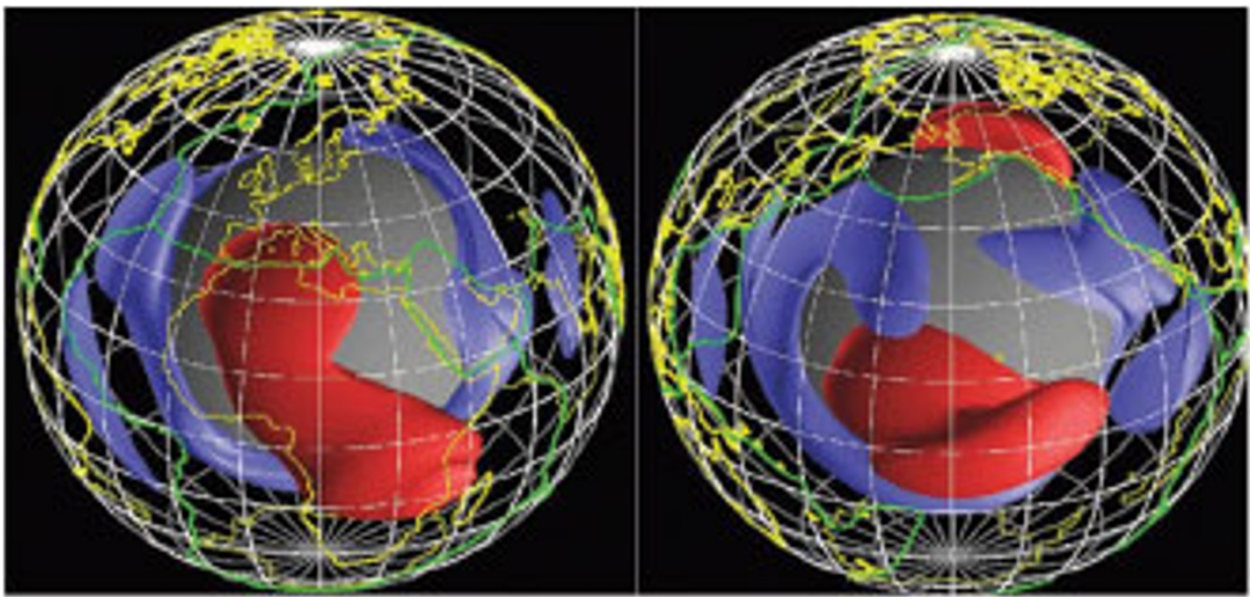


Fig. No. 49

Earth's Lower Mantle Interior – Seismic Tomography

Regions of cooler, denser (blue) and hotter, less dense (red) in the lower mantle, as shown by the seismic tomography.

- Footnote [1]

[1] https://www.icr.org/article/flood-catastrophic-plate-tectonics/

Jake Hebert, PH.D, *The Flood, Catastrophic Plate Tectonics, and Earth History*, July 31, 2017

- **(Copyright Not Approved!)**

Evidence also noted by Catastrophic Plate Tectonic advocates are the dense and less dense blobs that reside in the lower mantle of the earth. An imaging process called seismic tomography has revealed a ring of dense rock at the bottom of the mantle. Since its location corresponds approximately to the perimeter of the Pacific Ocean, it appears to represent subducted ocean crust – illustrated as a blue blob (Fig. 49). Located inside this ring of cold rock is a blob of less-dense rock that appears to have been squeezed upward toward the crust - illustrated as a red blob. If one assumes that the density of the cold ring, the blue blob, is comparable to that of the surrounding material, which is the most straightforward assumption, this ring is 3,000 to 4,000 °C colder than the inner red blob. This is completely unexpected in the conventional plate tectonic model since it can take about 100 million years for a slab to descend all the way to the base of the mantle. In that time, one would expect any such temperature differences to have evened out. However, in the catastrophic plate tectonics model, such a temperature difference is to be expected if the slab rapidly subducted into the mantle just a few thousand years ago. [1]

NU Flood Theory's perspective is that if the earth flipped in the recent past, being Noah's Flood, there should be an expectation that there ought to be a variability in density and temperature within the earth's mantle experiences uneven compression and shearing across its cross-section. The illustration shows blobs, more indicative of centripetal forces from the flip of the earth, not thin sheets or twisted ribbon shapes as one might expect with the Catastrophic Plate Tectonic theory.

---

[1] https://www.icr.org/article/flood-catastrophic-plate-tectonics/

Jake Hebert, PH.D, *The Flood, Catastrophic Plate Tectonics, and Earth History*, July 31, 2017

XXVII. A Recent Genesis Flood

In *Origin of Mountains*, field geologist and authors Cliff Ollier and Colin Pain believe that there is strong evidence that all of the major mountain ranges were formed in very recent geological times. Table 12.1, summarizes their data concluding that all the major mountains rose recently.[1] The major phase of uplift is believed to have occurred in the Plio-Pleistocene period or later which includes even the Himalayan mountains, based on upper layers of folded sedimentary rock from that time period. The Plio-Pleistocene is said to have occurred at a time period between 2 myr to 5 myr. Uniformitarians say that the Geological Column represents 560 million years. This means that for the whole time attributed to the column, there was no mountain building for the first 555 million years (i.e. Were there no Plate Tectonics for 555 million years, since there must not have been the process of 'subduction' to form any mountains in the Geological Column?)! If the Geological Column was represented by a twenty-four hour day, it would have only been in the last remaining four to twelve minutes that the mountains rose. No other time in the Geological Column has it been said that there was any epic period where major mountain ranges have risen since the Pre-Cambrian age.

> The globe was in tension and its crust cracked along a meridian for most of the length of the African continent. The cause may have been the subsidence of the Indian Ocean, or both tension in Africa and subsidence in the Indian Ocean could have a common cause. The mountain ridge on the floor of the Atlantic Ocean may have been produced by the same cause; and the time of the rupture and faulting must have been coincident with one of the periods of mountain formation in Europe and Asia. [2]

---

[1] Cliff Ollier and Colin Pain, The Origin of Mountains, Routledge, London, copyright 2000, ISBN 0-415-19889-5, pg. 304 - 306

[2] *Earth in Upheaval*, pp. 84-85
- Flint, *Glacial Geology*, p. 523: "Late Pleistocene mountain uplift occurred in the Himalayan region and in the Alps, and large-scale rifting took place in eastern Africa."

When considering that the African Rift may have been the result of, or perhaps occurred by, the same catastrophic event that resulted in the subsidence of the Indian Ocean and the mid-oceanic ridge, than it is not too much of a jump to say that it was very possible that nearly all the features of the land occurred during the same time nearly all the features in the oceans formed. The ocean floors are estimated to be 2.5 million years at the mid-oceanic ridge eight hundred miles wide. The ocean floor is no more than 200 million years old at its outer perimeter where it is said to be destroyed by subduction according to uniformitarians. It becomes even more evident that the features in the ocean and the features on land happened simultaneously given that the African Rift leads directly to the Red Sea that connects by rift valleys to the Jorden River dividing Israel and Jordan. The mid-oceanic ridge that encroaches the Red Sea extends to the Indian Ocean and to all the other oceans of the world, that was most likely formed at the same time as the great mountain ranges on land by the same catastrophic Flood event. The steep ravines of the mid-ocean ridges must be very young due to little ravine erosions accompanied by deep, transverse fractures that extend from continent to continent offsetting the mid-oceanic ridge.

Also, steep ravines along the deep fractures gave reason for young oceans by early advocates of the Plate Tectonic Theory. Many of these ravines are found at the mid-oceanic ridge and the transverse ocean floor. The transverse ocean floor fractures that extend from continent to continent are found all over the world and are sometimes less than 50 miles apart, but almost never cross each other. (NU Flood Theory says that the mid-oceanic ridge was the where the molten ocean floor swelled and the earth's axis changed resulting in the shearing of the ocean floor, while offsetting at the mid-ocean ridge system.) The transverse fractures must have been an inseparable event from the formation of the mid-oceanic ridge event, with no apparent ties to

the deep ocean trenches. Therefore, if the mid-oceanic ridge was the result of, or occurred by the same event, therefore; the ocean floor and its features cannot be any older than the mid-oceanic ridge. For the fractures to have occurred from continent to continent all over the world, the whole ocean floor must certainly have been in a molten state at one specific time. Therefore, 2.5 million years maximum, not 200 million years, should be assigned at the ocean floor outer subduction perimeter by Plate Tectonic advocates. This is not enough time to develop subduction at continental boundaries. If continental features (i.e. mountain ranges) are no older than the features of the ocean floor (i.e. mid-oceanic ridge and transverse fractures), than the features on the ocean floor and the features on land should not be assigned an age older than 2.5 to 5.0 million years by uniformitarian standards.

Carbon 14 is a radioisotope dating method often used to determine archeological dates that are previously known not to go back further than about 3000 years ago. The items typically tested include scrolls, grain and bones of humans and animals. Contamination is often blamed for inaccuracy for very ancient findings that are believed to go back further than 3000 years. Carbon 14 is derived by the bombardment of cosmic radiation that strikes Nitrogen 14 atoms, changing it to Carbon 14. Over a period of time, Carbon 14 atoms decay back to Nitrogen 14 atoms with a half-life of 5,730 years.

Carbon 14 is also found in the bones, coal and rocks of Flood strata, but after 100,000 hypothetical years, no trace of Carbon 14 carbon atoms should exist. Yet, when creation scientists tested samples by the most sophisticated AMS (accelerated mass spectrometry) method, Carbon 14 was found in dinosaur bones thought to be 65 to 200 million years old, in limestone rock (calcium carbonate) and marble (metamorphosed limestone) thought to be

hundreds of millions of years old. It is consistently found in coal samples thought to be 50 to 300 million years old. The Radioisotopes and the Age of the Earth (RATE) scientists discovered that diamonds found deep within the earth could not have been altered, since their carbon atoms are so tightly packed that they could not have been contaminated. Dinosaurs bones and rocks dated by the Carbon 14 method were found to be only just a few thousand, not millions of years old.[1] Therefore, the strata of the Flood, and therefore the Flood, must have been a recent event.

Dr. Mary Schweitzer, paleontologist at North Carolina State University, discovered remains of soft tissue in a Tyrannosaurus rex. She also confirmed the remains of blood cells in other dinosaur fossils thought to be 68 million years old. She was the first researcher to identify and isolate soft tissues (collagen, a connective protein) from a 68-million-year-old fossil bone.[2] The discovery of the soft tissue was discovered by accident when the T-rex was sawed in half in order to more easily transport it. After further examination, soft and stretch blood vessels and blood cells were discovered after acid had been applied to remove the rock casing.[3] After 68 million years, how is it possible for soft tissue to survive? Many scientists in the uniformitarian condemned such finding until the evidence said otherwise. Dinosaurs being buried by the recent Genesis Flood better fit the evidence for the very existence of dinosaur's soft tissue.

---

[1] Dr. John D. Morris, The Global Flood, Unlocking Earth's Geologic History, copyright 2012, first printing, Creation Research, P.O. Box 59029, Dallas, TX 75229, *ISBN: 978-1-935587-12-5*, Library of Congress Catalog Number: 2012949341, *pp.* 124.

[2] http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mary_Higby_Schweitzer

[3] Dr. John D. Morris, *The Global Flood, Unlocking Earth's Geologic History,* copyright 2012, first printing, Creation Research, P.O. Box 59029, Dallas, TX 75229, *ISBN: 978-1-935587-12-5*, Library of Congress Catalog Number: 2012949341, *pp.* 139-141.

Since Dr. Mary Schweitzer discovery, many other scientists have found similar findings. Uniformitarian scientists have not been able to come up with a satisfactory answer as to how it is possible to find blood cells or soft tissue in dinosaur bones supposedly to have been extinct for at least 65 million years. The obvious answer is that the dinosaur bones are not millions of years, but only thousands of years old and buried by the Genesis Flood in recent times as described in the Bible. There are many examples like this in the geological column. Given this is the case, then this puts the whole assigned dating the geological column into doubt. It also give reason to believe that the strata laid down in the Geological Column must be very young – perhaps since the Genesis Flood!

XXVIII. Biblical Support!

Genesis 7-11 (NIV)

11. In the six hundredth year of Noah's life, in the second month, the seventeenth day of the month, the same day were **all** the fountains of the great deep broken up, and the windows of heaven were opened.[1] (emphasis added)

This author believes the Bible is the inerrant word of God, therefore, all verses in it are factual when taken in context. Other Bible verses talk about the Flood, other than Genesis

[1] Genesis 7-11 (NIV)

chapter 6-8 that relates the Flood story. Many of these other verses are also presented in the NU Flood Theory flood model to reinforce just how catastrophic the Flood event was and to emphasize how God, in His justice and grace, dealt with the wickedness of mankind. The following is a discussion of the primary verses that the author believes support the NU Flood theory as well as the authur's interpretation of the context to the verses.

Genesis 7:11 gives two sources of the Flood waters. The first is from the "fountains of the great deep", the second is from the "windows of heaven". Both began at the same time, but appear to have ended at different times. Genesis says that it rained for forty days, as pertaining to the "windows of heaven", but Genesis 7:24 says that the waters were already abating by the 150th day. The Floodwaters were draining off the continents into the new oceans. This implies that before the 150th day, that the mechanism of the "fountains of the deep" was no longer in operation, or had greatly diminished. This raises several other Flood questions. Where did the Floodwaters come from? Was the "great deep" the Floodwaters from only the pre-Flood seas? Or, did it come from a subterranean source deeper than the ocean floors? If so, is there a relationship between the "foundation" and the Genesis Flood? Job 38 is a great place to begin answering these questions.

Job 38:2 (NIV)

2. "Who is this that darkens my counsel with words without knowledge?" [1]

Proverb 9:10 (NIV)

10. "The fear of the LORD is the beginning of wisdom, …" [2]

[1] Job 38:2 (NIV)

[2] Proverb 9:10 (NIV)

In Job 38:2, Job's three critical friends want him foolishly gave their human wisdom without first inquiring of God, unlike what God requires of us in Prov. 9:10. God then weighs in, exposing their foolishness and demanded them to now answer Him. To better understand why God asked Job's friends the series of questions he asked, we need to first think in terms of a parable by the author called, "Foolish Men, but Thought Themselves Wise".

The parable goes as follows. There were once foolish men who were wise in their own eyes who were before a very feared, powerful, wise king. The king was about to throw them into a dungeon and throw away the keys for their careless ways for not asking for his counsel. But before he was about the throw them into the dungeon, he asks the foolish men a series of questions. He asked if they could really understand how immense and secure his dungeon was. He describes how thousands of other foolish men have previously been thrown into the dungeon into eternal darkness for similar crimes and never to return to the light again. In compassion, the king frees the foolish men with a strong warning to not be so careless, even in attempts to do good for their friend. So, in fear of the king, even the most foolish men can gain wisdom.

This may have been the context that God questions Job and his friends. This context is important, since the fear by the king is based on the reality of a real punishment that he will throw evil men into a dungeon, based on the king's passed decisions that he had thrown many in into prison in the past. In the same way, Job's friends needed the fear of God to repent based on the earthly reality of the 'dungeon' where wicked men during the Flood were cast into, never to return.

In Job 38:4-21, God described an earth size ossuary/sepulcher/dungeon for the wicked who drowned in the Flood. An ossuary is a burial box wherein the ancient Jews place their loved one's bones. The ossuary was then placed in a family cave. Wealthy families place their dead family members in more ordinate ossuaries with designs carved on the top and sides. In that light, Job 38 should not be thought of only in allegorical terms, but also as reality. A sepulcher was a cave where a dead body was laid. The opening was covered by a rock, or earth.

God asked Job's foolish friends who set the boundaries between of waters of the sea and the land. Job 38 begins with a seemingly indirect reference to the Flood by referencing to the foundations of the earth – asking them if they were there when he "laid the earth's foundation?. Who marked off its dimensions?" Then Job 38:8-11 continues with verses that most readers would describe as clear Flood terminology where God says that He allowed the Floodwaters to subside, giving sea shore boundaries to separate the sea from the land. Why does God ask these questions of Job's friends? Is it because God simply wants them to know how great a God, He is by extolling how grand His creation of earth is and the boundaries that He has placed on it? Or, is there a much more deeper contexts to these questions? What God is really asking them rhetorically in today's vernacular is, "Why did you not fear God to even inquire of Him? Did you not need God? Did you not know that the people before the Flood were destroyed because they were wise unto themselves doing what was right in their own eyes? Why did you not seek God, denying God His place and His very existence? Therefore, why should God not destroy His abstinent creation by the Flood? Why shouldn't you be punished for your own sin with the same penalty of death as those destroyed by the Flood? Do you really want to know the burial place and what that place of torment is like for sinful men, like them before you, that were swept away by the Flood? This is the context of Job 38. Job 38:4 begins with God asking Job's friends if

they were there when He laid the earth's foundation. Do they know the dimensions of the foundations, because this was the dungeon that many before Job were cast into during the Flood. This is the same important questions that God is asking us today in His Word from the book of Job.

Job 38:3-5, 8, 13-20 (NIV)

3. "Brace yourself like a man; I will question you, and you shall answer me.
4. Where were you when I laid the earth's foundation?
5. Who marked off its dimensions? Surely you know!
8. "Who shut up the sea behind doors when it burst forth from the womb, …
13. … that it might take the earth by the edges and shake the wicked out of it?
14. The earth takes shape like clay under a seal; its features stand out like those of a garment.
15. The wicked are denied their light, and their upraised arm is broken.
16. "Have you journeyed to the springs of the sea or walked in the recesses of the deep?
17. Have the gates of death been shown to you? Have you seen the gates of the shadow of death?
18. Have you comprehended the vast expanses of the earth? Tell me if you know this.
19. "What is the way to the abode of light? And where does darkness reside?
20. Can you take them to their places? Do you know the paths to their dwellings? [1]

In these verses, God was describing the earth, not simply as His marvelous creation, but as an **earth size ossuary/sepulcher/dungeon** for those who drowned in the Flood. The 'foundations', where the "…fountains of the great deep" came from, is its capstone. This foundation capstone is the upper mantle sphere that covers the entire earth. Its ordinate cover is decorated by land with majestic mountains that appear to have been made by clay seals that look like they have been rolled forming creases, or folds, over the landscape as if it were a garment. Within, and under, the capstone are incalculable tunnels and caverns where magma and water initially spewed out the first days of the Flood. After 150 days, drowned men were drawn into, or cast into, their watery graves where the light never shines. These innumerable Flood tunnels

[1] Job 38:3-5, 8, 13, 15-20 (NIV)

and caverns are “the paths to their dwellings” where “darkness resides” and there abides the “shadow of death.”

During the Flood event, wicked men were violently swept away into the sea, raising their arms for help. But, as they raised their arms, their arms were broken by the powerful, rushing water and massive debris that swept them away. The fossil record is full of broken bones with few bones ever intact. Where was humanity swept away and buried? Many were buried below the “gates of death” or “shadow of death”. This must be where the Floodwaters first “burst forth from the womb” that was once “shut up the sea behind doors.” The Floodwater did not burst from the sea itself, nor was the sea itself considered the “gates of death”. Therefore, the “gates of death” is the top surface of the “foundations” under the seas, since it is its entrance to the “shadow of death.” This strongly indicates that wicked men were not only swept into the sea, but were swept into the fractured mantle, or ‘foundations’, of the earth by the Floodwaters.

If this is the case, then the Bible supports the idea that the Floodwaters came from the “foundations” under the seas. Therefore, the Floodwaters returned from the same place they came – the foundation, or the mantle. (This fact is important, since NU Flood Theory makes the bold claim that most of the source of Floodwaters that covered today’s mountains, including the Himalayan Mountains, returning back to its initial source – the mantle. Therefore, the mantle must have oceans of water in it today for the NU Flood Theory to be true. This is what the presented evidence has shown.)

Job 38:8- 11 (NIV)

8. "Who shut up the sea behind doors when it burst forth from the womb, and wrapped it in a thick darkness,
9. when I made the clouds its garment and wrapped it in thick darkness,
10. when I fixed limits for it and set its doors and bars in place,

11. when I said, 'This far you may come and no farther; here is where your proud waves halt'? [1]

Historically, Job is thought to precede Abraham; therefore, there are only two notable historical events that give context to the book of Job - Creation and the Flood. In Job 38:8-11, God used Flood terminology and can, therefore, only be talking about the Flood. When Job 38:4-20 is taken in context, it is most likely related to the reality of the Flood event, not Creation. Verse 8 cannot be talking about the sea waters shutting the door on itself, since water is not solid or able to close on itself. Therefore, it does not make a very good door. Also, in verse 8, "...Who shut up the sea behind doors when it burst forth from the womb ...", strongly implies that the Floodwater burst out of something massive, strong, and solid that previously contained it. Again, it cannot be the sea since the sea does not contain itself. This containment must be the firmament under the sea, not by sea, as reinforced by verses 10 and 11, "when I fixed limits for it and set its doors and bars in place, when I said, "This far you may come and no farther; here is where your proud waves halt'?" At the ocean rim, it is contained by real, physical continents. At its basin, the Floodwaters were also contained by a real, physical earth basement. We thereby can reason that the Floodwaters that burst must have initially been contained in the "foundation" of the earth. Therefore, verse 8 directly ties the relationship of the Flood to the "foundation." Therefore, the verse must be talking about something solid under the sea floor that today is referred to as the mantle which contains the ocean waters of the earth that the continents rest on.

In verses 8 & 9, "..., and wrapped it in a thick darkness, I made the clouds its garment and wrapped it in thick darkness,...", God is saying that during the initial Flood event, thick black clouds covered the earth for days or months. Even in Job's day, it was still in their collective

[1] Job 38:8- 11 (NIV)

memories, which God directly refers to without requiring a lot of detail. Ancient cultures, such as the Egyptions, refer back to this catastrophism event as the time that the "sky fell". What were these thick black garments of clouds? These were the result of hundreds of thousands of volcanoes that suddenly erupted on the ocean sea floors and land the first days of the Flood that consumed the earth for months. As it did so, thousands of cubic miles of volcanic debris and aerosols immediately filled the earth's atmosphere, blocking all light of the Sun and Moon from reaching the earth's surface. These aerosols would have caused the earth's temperatures to drop dramatically for years to follow, later resulting in an Ice Age lasting several hundred years (see Job 38:22-23 and XVII. Mount St. Helens). Many of these volcanoes would have continued to explode long after the Flood until the earth came to an equilibrium. Even today we see extinct volcanoes and active volcanoes erupting as a result of the residual catastrophism of the Flood.

Job 38:12- 13 (NIV)

12. "Have you ever given orders to the morning, or shown the dawn its place,
13. that it might take the earth by the edges and shake the wicked out of it? [1]

Do the Flood verses in Job actually talk about a potential earth flip on its axis? ***Yes, in Job 38:12-13, God appears to be saying that He flipped the earth during the Flood event!*** In verse 12 in the middle of a Flood discourse, a casual reader may at first think that God is talking about creation week, Day Four, in Genesis 1:14-19 with the creation of morning and evening. But, with a deeper look, it does not appear to be a creation of morning and evening at all, but a re-ordering of morning and evening in the context of the Flood event. This is supported by verse 13, where, continuing in the same sentence that the earth was shaken for the purpose of the destruction of wicked men who were destroyed during the Flood.

[1] Job 38:12- 13 (NIV)

It could not have been creation week on Day Four when God created the Sun and Moon to mark our days and seasons in Genesis 1:14, since man had not yet been created till Day Six– noted later in Genesis 1:26-28. Therefore, it must be in the context of Flood terminology where God has re-ordered the morning and the evening by literally flipping the earth, which destroyed wicked men by shaking of the earth, possibly by flipping it. The re-ordering of morning and evening could not have been the path of the Sun that changed, since it specifically mentions only the action of grabbing, "…the earth by the edges and shake the wicked out of it". Many may be thinking that this is God speaking allegorically, or in a spiritual sense, but it makes much more sense that God is asking Job's friend to answer Him directly about a real earth flip with regard to a real foundation in context of the real Genesis Flood where real evil men were destroyed and buried by the Flood in their own recent historical memory. In other words, a re-ordering of the morning and evening might be described as follows. Before the Flood, the sun rose on the west and set on the east. After the Flood, the sun now rises on the east and sets in the west.

Psalm 18:15 (KJV)

Then the channels of waters were seen, and the foundations of the world were discovered at thy rebuke, O Lord, at the blast of the breath of thy nostrils.[1]

2 Samuel 22:16 (NIV)

The valleys of the sea were exposed and the foundations of the earth laid bare at the rebuke of the Lord, at the blast of breath from his nostrils. [2]

[1] Psalm 18:15 (KJV)

[2] 2 Samuel 22:16 (NIV)

Isaiah 51:10 (NIV)

Was it not you who dried up the sea, the waters of the great deep, who made a road in the depths of the sea so that the redeemed might cross over? [1]

Amos 9:5-6 (NIV)

5. The Lord, the LORD Almighty, he who touches the earth and it melts, and all who live in it mourn – the whole land rises like the Nile, then sinks like the river of Egypt. [2]

Is the foundation a real place? Where are the waters of the great deep now? Psalm 18: 15, 2 Samuel 22:16, and Isaiah 51:10 directly connect the idea that "the ***waters of the great deep***" cover the "foundations of the world (or earth)" specifically with regard to the Red Sea during the Israelite Exodus. These verses also say that the 'foundations' were seen by the Israelites who were led by Moses across the Red Sea when they walked on dry ground. Therefore, since the Red Sea is a real place, so must the 'foundation' they walked over was a real, tangible place. The Red Sea was considered a part of the 'waters of the great deep' as also referred in Genesis 7:11 - the Flood narrative. The Red Sea floor must have risen to allow them to walk across on dry ground (Amos 9:5). (Note that Amos 9:5 is talking about the land rising, then falling, not the sea rising and falling.)

The Red Sea is one of the very few places on earth that is nearly part of the land, but is an extension of the mid-oceanic ridge. The Red Sea is also an extension of the Indian Ocean and Mediterranean Sea, which connects all the oceans of the world. The Red Sea mid-oceanic ridge is a much smaller part, but is very much a part of the ocean floor mid-oceanic ridge system that covers the entire earth like a seam of a baseball. Therefore, the ***"foundations*** of the world" apply

[1] Isaiah 51:10 (NIV)

[2] Amos 9:5-6 (NIV)

to the earth's mantle and its entire associated mid-oceanic ridge system of the ocean floor that itself once swelled up during the Flood event. The 'foundations' of the earth must have risen and formed the mid-oceanic ridge that now covers the entire earth. The mid-oceanic ridge was where the mantle had expanded and was exposed through the basalt ocean floor layer. Therefore, the 'foundation of the earth' appears to be known as the earth's mantle. At the mid-oceanic ridge is where the mantle was exposed, which bisects the Red Sea that rose to be seen by the Israelites. *Scientific American* describes the Red Sea as oceanic, not continental rock.

> The Red Sea and the Gulf of Aden appear to be embryo oceans. Their floors are truly oceanic, with no continental rocks; along their axis one can find offset lengths of crack joined by fracture zones, and magnetic surveys show the worldwide magnetic pattern but only the most recent parts of it. [1]

Amos 9:5 may be describing the detaching of PanNoah from the mantle when the earth flipped causing PanNoah to float and slide over the once magma surface of the earth during the Flood event. It may also be describing the 'isostacy' ("sinks" to equilibrium over time) of the breaking continents and islands after they came to a stop and after coming to an equilibrium with the mantle – similar to a breaking glacier comes to equilibrium with the sea level as it separates from a larger body of ice. Or, Amos may simply be speaking of the time when the Israelites fled slavery from Egypt.

Psalm 104:5-9 (KJV)

[1] *Continents Adrift,* Readings from Scientific American, *Origin of the Oceans, (September 1969),* Sir Edward Bullard, September 1972, pp. 95.

5. Who layeth the foundations of the earth, that it should not be removed forever.
6. Thou coveredst it with the deep as with a garment: the waters stood above the mountains.
7. At thy rebuke they fled; at the voice of thy thunder they hasted away.
8. They go up by the mountains; they go down by the valleys unto the place which thou hast founded for them.
9. Thou hast set a bound that they may not pass over; that they turn not again to cover the earth. [1]

Psalm 104:5-9 is considered Flood verses, especially in context of verse 9. If the foundation is the mantle of the earth, what is covering it like a garment – verse 6? What covers nearly the entire ocean floor today is the ocean floor crust that is three to five miles in depth, except for the mid-oceanic ridge portion. It was the magma that exploded out of the mantle through plumes and fractures, along with the Floodwaters, that displaced the pre-Flood ocean floor. It later cooled and solidified into basalt rock, now known as the 'ocean crust,' that covered the ocean mantle floor during the early Flood event. Again, there is no doubt that these verses are talking about the Flood, especially given verse 9 says that these Floodwaters will never again destroy the earth. The cover of magma and sediments over the mid-oceanic ridge is not nearly as thick as what is covering the ocean basin, because the ridge arose miles above their current elevation between the continents while they were breaking apart. The magma along the ridge location slid down the slopes leaving much of the mantle ridge slopes exposed. Just before the 150 days, the expanded earth began to shrink back to close to its original size. As it did so, the mid-oceanic ridge elevation decreased and much of the Floodwaters returned back to the mantle from where it had come. These verses in the KJV and NIV version appear not to be talking about the action of the land rising and falling, but the action of the water draining off the land during the end of the Flood. Many other creation scientists take the view that it is the action on

[1] Psalm 104:5-9 (KJV)

the land, not the water, sighting other Bible translations. Neither view make a difference to the NU Flood Theory, as it does for creationist who believe that mountains formed just before the 150th day of the Flood.

Psalm 114:3-7(KJV)

3. The sea looked and fled, the Jordan turned back;
4. the mountains skipped like rams, the hills like lambs.
5. Why was it, O sea, that you fled, O Jordan, that you turned back,
6. you mountains, that you skipped like rams, you hills, like lambs?
7. Tremble, O earth, at the presence of the Lord, …" [1]

What if the above verses are not allegorical, but described a real event? What if mountains are not always fixed, attached objects as we typically think, but have moved in the past in a dynamic manner. If they have moved, perhaps it was that initial movement that resulted in their existence. Nearly every mountain range of the world can be demonstrated to have moved, perhaps as much as a hundred plus miles during its recent history (see XV. Mountain Formation). It is possible that during the time that Israel was leaving Egypt to go to the Promise Land that Israel not only saw the 'foundations of the earth', but also saw existing mountains "skip", seeing God do miracles of moving the earth tectonically to allow them to cross both the Red Sea and Jordan River. Both these miracles may have, been in part, the result of the residual effect of the Flood with God directing the event and timing, as the miracle He had directed in the Genesis Flood.

If mountains and hills skip, this implies that they do not have deep roots, but have a slide plane underneath them. It also implies that they lie over a more solid smoother surface like a garment over a table top. This also implies that mountains must have initially formed quickly

[1] Psalm 114:3-7(KJV)

by cascading, as described in the formation of mountains in the NU Flood Theory. This means that the earth's upper land crust is not fixed, as many are led to believe, but was once dynamic. It also implies the 'isostacy' is the result of, and not the reason for the formation of mountains as described by the Plate Tectonic Theory. Are there any other verses that speak of mountains being spread out like a garment?

Job 38:14 (NIV)

14. The earth takes shape like clay under a seal; its features stand out like those of a garment.[1]

Returning to Job 38, verse 14, very graphic terms – 'clay under a seal' and 'garment' are used. The seal is most likely not a stamp seal, but a cylinder seal that is rolled like a rolling pin. The cylinder seal was used to roll out an impression onto mailable clay (Gen. 38:18). Like a rolling pin rolling out flour dough in front of it, so the cylinder seal rolled out clay in front of it. As it pushed the excess clay in front of it, the excess clay would mount up and form ripples like a 'garment' in front of it. These ripples are an analogy of how mountains formed. This strongly implies for something to ripple like a 'garment', there must be a firm surface below, analogist to a hard table top surface, for the separate, independent, pliable material, 'clay', too be rolled over. It implies that the upper surface is made up of a different, malleable material then the earth foundation that it is sliding over, with a slide plane between the two.

And so, it was that mountains were formed by massive amounts of wet sediment that was thrust in a particular direction. As it was thrust, the upper wet sediment wrinkled, or folded, like a garment in the direction that it was thrust in the direction that the earth was flipped. In God's

[1] 12. Job 38:14 (NIV)

description, the hills and mountains of the earth are like the ordinate features on an ossuary for those that were drowned and swept away into the foundations of the earth during the Flood.

Jonah 2:6 (KJV)

6. I went down to the bottoms of the mountains; the earth with her bars was about me forever: yet hast thou brought up my life corruption, O LORD my God. [1]

Other Biblical evidence that the mountain roots are not deep, include Jonah who was being thrown overboard by the sailors during a terrible storm that God brought about because of Jonah's disobedience. Jonah was cast into was the Mediterranean Sea where he was fleeing in the opposite direction from Nineveh. Jonah testifies that he sank to the bottoms of the mountains where he saw the bottom of the mountains, or the roots of the mountains. This indicates that these mountain roots do not go deep, but stayed afloat by the ocean floor crust (or garment over the mantle) of the Mediterranean Sea. This implies that since there were virtually no mountain roots. This again implies a potential slide-surface boundary. Also, notice that Jonah relates this great depth in the sea at the root of the mountains as "her bars about me!". Notice that Jonah uses similar the "bars" Flood terminology in relation to the mountains 'foundation', the mantle, in the depths of the sea as Job 38:10, "… when I fixed limits for it and set its doors and bars in place,…" Note that the bars in both instances are a reference to the earth, or "foundation", not the water of the sea, saying in Jonah, "…the earth with her bars was about me forever: …."[2] The depths of the sea were understood by the patriarchs as a place of death with no escape, possibly relating back to the burial of humanity during the Flood. (Note: There are two different garments being discussed. First is the ocean floor crust that overlies the mantle. Second are the

[1] Jonah 2:6 (KJV)

[2] Jonah 2:6 (KJV)

hills and mountains that act as a garment over their slide surface covering much of the earth's crust that sometimes extends into the sea.)

Job 38:31 (NIV)

31. Can you bind the beautiful Pleiades? Can you loose the cords of Orion? Can you bring forth the constellations in their seasons or lead out the Bear with its cubs? [1]

The Bible may even say what month the Flood occurred, since Job 38:31 may be in context of the Flood. Pleiades were known to the ancient world as the "seven sisters" consolation. These seven stars are known to be held together by gravity. Orion is the strong man consolation whose gravitational attraction at his cords is held less tightly. God seems to be saying that it is He who binds or releases the stars. God may also be saying that if He can bind and release the stars, can He not also bind evil by destroying it with the Flood and then releasing it from evil by removing the Floodwaters from the face of the earth, promising never to destroy the earth again by water. God may also be saying that if He can bind and release the stars, can He not also release the waters of the Flood on earth and then bind it so that it may not encroach onto the land, Job 38:10-11. In either case, if God can control over the binding and releasing of the stars, then He certainly had control over the Floodwaters of the earth. He also had control over the exact timing of the Flood as He has predetermined by the stars – perhaps denoting the beginning and end of the months by the stars of Pleiades and Orion. The Great Bear may have played a part of the Polar Star with her stars (cubs) revolving around her, instead of Polaris, during the time of Job while the earth was still settling into its rotation. [2]

---

[1] Job 38:31 (NIV)

[2] Velikovsky, Immanuel. *Worlds in Collision* (New York, NY: Pocket Books, 1977), ISBN 0-671-82717-0, pp. 316.

Does the Bible talk about a future flip of the earth? If so, how does it relate to the formation, or destruction, of mountains and islands? How might this be related to the Flood event?

Isaiah 24:1 (KJV), 18-20 (NIV) says the following.

1. Behold, the LORD maketh the earth empty, and maketh it waste, and turneth it upside down, and scattereth abroad the inhabitants thereof. ….[1]

18. …. The floodgates of the heavens are opened, the foundations of the earth shake.
19. The earth is broken up, the earth is split asunder, the earth is thoroughly shaken.
20. The earth reels like a drunkard, it sways like a hut in the wind; so heavy upon it is the guilt of its rebellion that it falls – never to rise again.[2]

Revelations 16:20 (KJV)

20. And every island fled away, and the mountains were not found.
21. From the sky huge hailstones of about a hundred pounds each fell on men.[3]

The Old and New Testament often speak of how God has, and will, destroy the earth again. First, the earth was destroyed by 'water' as told by the Genesis Flood. Second, the earth will be destroyed by 'fire' in the end of times as told in Peter 3:7 and Revelations. Had the earth not been destroyed by 'water' during the Genesis Flood, it would have been destroyed by 'fire', given all the magma that covered the entire ocean floor during the Flood event.

---

[1] Isaiah 24:1 (KJV)

[2] Isaiah 24:18-20 (NIV)

[3] Revelations 16:20 (KJV)

The Bible often speaks of these two great cataclysmic events in tandem of God's great judgments on sinful men. Isaiah 24 talks about a future flip of the earth which may, or may not, be allegorical. If the earth is to flip again, it will most likely take place in the end times spoken of in Revelations16:20. Revelations speaks of the destruction of every island and the mountains will become flat. It also describes large hailstones that fall on men. How is this similar to the Genesis Flood? Isaiah uses Flood terminology. Isaiah and Revelations are very similar to what is described by the NU Flood Theory as to how the Flood happened, but in some cases with reverse consequences. The hailstones that fall on men in Revelations may be the result of meteorites, or they may be due to the upheaval due to the flip of the earth as described in Isaiah. The description of islands fleeing and mountains collapsing are the reverse circumstances of NU Flood Theory account of how all the islands formed and how the mountains formed by cascading. If the same mechanisms occurred as described in the NU Flood Theory, perhaps it will be a similar mechanism that will bring about the end times in Revelations to bring about the destruction of islands and mountains. Just as the Genesis Flood was a judgment for sinful man, so will be the coming of Christ in the end times as told in Revelation. In Mathew 12:37, Jesus may not have only been comparing the immoral time of the end times with Noah's time; He may have also been talking about the same mechanism that nearly destroyed the earth by Flood, to be the same mechanism that will destroy the earth by 'fire' as stated in 2 Peter 3:6-7. Or God may choose to use a totally different mechanism.

Mathew 24:37 (KJV)

20. "But as the days of Noah were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be." [1]

[1] Mathew 24:37 (KJV)

Peter 3:6-7 (NIV)

6. By these waters also the world of that time was deluged and destroyed.
7. By the same word the present heavens and earth are reserved for fire, being kept for the day of judgment and destruction of ungodly men.[2]

If the end times are to occur with the same mechanism as the Genesis Flood has described by the NU Flood Theory, then does this mean that the end times will be the result of another meteorite blast through our solar system as in the days of Noah? This possibility should not be discounted. The destruction by flooding may simply be secondary to primarily phenomenon of being destroyed by fire. Similarly, in Noah's day, the earth was primarily destroyed by water, but secondarily, it was also destroyed by fire as lava filled all the ocean floor five to seven kilometers deep. Igneous, metamorphic, and mafic rock covered all the continents.

XXIV. Noah's Upheaval Theory's Potential Weaknesses

What are the greatest weaknesses of the NU Flood Theory? That may depend more on perspective, as opposed to sound science. As with any model or theory, the NU Flood Theory is based on assumptions that others in the scientific community may see as weaknesses that need more support, unacceptable, or believed heretical. What is perceived as NU Flood Theory greatest weakness, may actually be its greatest strength. The following are the author's guess as to what may give the greatest doubt to this theory.

1. Asteroid blast.
2. Earth and possibly other planets flipped.
3. Existence of PanNoah and its rotation and its break-up in the Western Pacific Ocean.
4. No continuous cratons from the earth's surface into the mantle.

[2] 2 Peter 3:6-7 (NIV)

5. Metamorphic rock, and possible even some diamonds, formed at the surface of the earth.
6. Volcanoes and Earthquake cause.
7. Mountain formation
8. Megasequences formation.
9. History
10. Scripture interpretation.

First understand that this is a new hypothesis/theory that is being introduced. There are the facts of standard science and there is the interpretation/narrative of the facts. The author understands that this hypothesis does not agree with the standard interpretation of the standard astronomy, geology and geophysics, but is simply giving a new narrative of the facts. This hypothesis is not met to be an addition of interpretive knowledge that is built on previous understanding of standard science. Instead, it is looking at the total facts of the sciences with a different eyeglass lenses and consider a totally different narrative interpretation of the scientific facts, as was the case of Italian astronomer Galileo Galilei looking into the night sky and discovery Jupiter's moons circling Jupiter in 1610 with his self-made telescope. His new found knowledge totally changed the standard belief of the day that providing strong evidence for the Copernican theory that most celestial objects did not revolve around the Earth. Understandably, it is very difficult to changes one's views in the light of certain accepted standard interruptive ideas being taught as facts, when in reality, they are simply a wrong narrative of the facts. The above list of potential controversial items has been explained in detail throughout this book as if it were a Crime Scene Investigation, CSI. In order to except the primary premise of this hypothesis, you must accept that the earth flipped during the time of Noah's Flood. If you accept

this premise, then all the other claims and unsolved scientific mysteries will fall in place. If your starting point is wrong, then everything that follows will be wrong. This is certainly true for the ideas of theological, philosophy and science which this Flood model touches each. It is up to you, the reader, to determine if it has been adequately vetted and explained to your satisfaction.

XXX. Conclusion

The concept of an earth flip may be the most difficult aspect of the Noah's Upheaval (NU) Flood Theory too accept, but it was supported in writing by the two greatest thinkers and scientist of the western civilized world – Issacs Newton and Albert Einstein. The NU Theory describes exactly how it happen in a very specific sequence.

The premise of the NU Flood Theory is similar to a Crime Scene Investigation, CSI, based on the real field evidence to determine how the Flood event might have happened. Since the Bible is the inerrant Word of God, which includes the Genesis Flood, therefore; Genesis chapter six and seven is central to the facts of the case. They provide a historical background, but leaves much unsettled that need to be answered by other verses and the science of geology and astronomy. There exists much more evidence to the NU Flood Theory model, but not nearly enough space to articulate everything in this book.[1] This theory, in the simplest manner, describes a step by step process of how all the continents broke up and came to be where they are today. It explains why several of the continents have "V" shapes which are only on the south end. It explains why so many peninsulas are fixed on the north end and cantilevered on the south end. It describes why islands are almost exclusively on the east side of the mother continent. It explains how mountains were formed in the oceans and on the continents. It explains planations and how mountains moved over a hundred miles over a 'decollement' surface. It explains how

[1] Smith, Wes. *Solving Noah's Flood*, (copyright 2015)

all the major features of the oceans were formed. It shows many cases where land features extend far into the ocean floor, demonstrating that the break-up of the land and ocean features were the direct result a catastrophic event that occurred simultaneously resulting in land features being scattered over the ocean floor.

It explains magnetic anomalies on the ocean floors, tells why the placements of volcanoes and earthquakes are located along the tectonic boundaries - known as the 'Ring of Fire.' It describes why the granite rock is at the earth's surface, instead of very deep in the earth where many scientists believe that it had originated. It gives reason to the magma plumes, shields and traps all over the earth; and so much more.

In summary, there is nothing on the face of the earth, or in our immediate solar system, including our sun, that was not dramatically changed by the Genesis Flood event – mostly during the first days of the Flood. The preponderance of evidence, deems the earth to have flipped and the continents to have slid over the surface of the earth's mantle before it broke up. The surface that the continents slid over was a molten lava ocean floor and the fountains of deep, magma and the Floodwaters, that had extruded up from the mantle through plumes and volcanoes when the earth flipped. If the continents slid over the earth's surface and not ridden on the lithosphere plates, then Plate Tectonic Theory is no longer a viable possibility. PanNoah's path is easily seen in the South and West Pacific Ocean.

The NU Flood Theory model is very unique in that it describes in a very specific sequential manner as if it were a CSI investigation, that is necessary to make the case in a court of law. It gives sound physics 'cause and effect' mechanisms of what most likely resulted in the most catastrophic event in man's recorded history that later determined the origin and rise of

ancient civilizations. This means that it is presented in a way that extends much farther than simply saying that 'the land sank and the ocean floors rose.' It also gives the exact sequence as to when and how all the major geological topography of land and ocean occurred. Because of its unique sequential nature, it can therefore easily be shown to be false, depending on the preponderance of the evidence. The power of the model is that it gives the exact sequence of how the continents broke up over the earth's surface and the exact path that was carved out on the ocean floor. It gives the exact path that PanNoah took and broke into islands and continents that is easily identifiable on the ocean floors and traceable on land. Unlike Plate Tectonics, it is not a theory that explains all things where continents and plates can move any direction to create any particular desired earth feature without a specific sequence and direction tied to it.

Most importantly, the cosmic and geophysics science is in accordance with the Flood event told in the Bible. It is my hope that this model will encourage others to search God's Word and find it trustworthy, not only in its science, but in every aspect from Genesis to Revelation. This proposed theory is not the inerrant Word of God, and should not be treated as such. But it should also be given a fair opportunity to see the facts and the interpretation of the facts as presented by this Flood model. Many scientists disagree with the Bible, because they accept a uniformitarian belief [1], who core belief includes evolution, that, "the present processes were the

[1] *(The belief in uniformitarianism inherently suggest that the universe and the earth are millions of years old. This means that the fossils of the earth within the Geological Column are millions of years old and must have occurred without God. This is a direct attack on the Bible without explicitly saying so. If the earth and universe are millions of years old, then the creation of the universe in Genesis cannot have been created in six days. The earth and universe could not have been created little more than six thousand years ago as has been calculated from the*

key to the past" whose interpretations of facts that continually change with more research, and therefore; they often lead to flawed conclusions. If your starting point is wrong, your conclusions are going to be wrong. True science is always in search of truth. Only the Bible is the book of truth, authored by the God of truth who never changes, nor ever has a need to change.

It is the desire of this author that when people see a the rings of Saturn, craters on the moon, the spin a desk globe, go hiking in the Grand Canyon, go fishing on the oceans and lakes, see pictures of the Appalachian and Himalayan Mountains or simple collect fossils or admiration of quarts or gems, that it will reminder of the direct evidence of the catastrophic Genesis Flood. We are surrounded every where we look of evidence of the Flood. It is the limestone, sandstone and coal under our feet. It was the Ice Age resulting from the Flood, and immediately followed the Flood, leaving behind moraines in places like the state of Michigan. The plateaus, rivers and valleys across the globe are the direct consequences of the Ice Age and Flood. The effect of the worldwide Flood was that prevalent!

It is all a reminder that God destroyed this earth because of our sins and that in his ultimate love, provided his only son Jesus Christ, as our Savior, if we only accept him.

---

chronology of the Bible. If evolution were true, there would be millions of dead animals in the fossil record before the first man and woman was created. This negates the need for Jesus Christ, our Savior; if the consequences of sin were death, if death occurred before creation on man and women. Evolution disagrees with the Bible that plant and animal come from their own kind. Both uniformitarianism and evolution have resulted a culture of death (i.e. lying, cheating, murder, abortion, divorce, slavery,and racism) when it does not include the God of the Bible.)

Ultimately, based on the information provided, it is my desire that the readers will accept the as Bible inerrant and Jesus Christ as their personal Lord and Savior.

End Notes - Figures

1. Mike Oard, *Flood by Design:Receding Water Shapes the Earth's Surface*, Master Books, Green Forest, AR, 2008, ISBN-13: 978-0-89051-523-5, pp 111. - **NOT Approved!**
2. http://www.usgs.gov/
3. '**understanding.html - anchor15039288"Understanding plate motions"**

   URL: http://pubs.usgs.gov/publications/text/Vigil.html
   Last updated: 05.05.99
   Contact: jmwatson@usgs.gov

4. 'understanding.html - anchor15039288"Understanding plate motions"
5. 'understanding.html - anchor15039288"Understanding plate motions"
6. *Shaping the Earth, Tectonics of Continents and Oceans,* Readings from Scientific American, *The Oceanic Crust,* Jean Francheteau, September 1983, Figure 2.1, pp. 24. - **NOT Approved!**
7. https://s1.ibtimes.com/sites/www.ibtimes.com/files/styles/embed/public/2015/04/27/world-usgs-map.JPG
8. https://answersingenesis.org/geology/geologic-time-scale/geologic-column/

NOT Approved!

9. https://cdn.images.express.co.uk/img/dynamic/78/590x/asteroid-mapped-space-nasa-862780.jpg

11-20 Shaping the Earth, Tectonics of Continents and Oceans, preface (background map only).

21. https://www.bing.com/images/search?view=detailV2&ccid=VguwdBWP&id=03FDADFCD407E3773CB34973F9DD723B81650D97&thid=OIP.VguwdBWPP0ZJkiRviY3wKQAAAA&mediaurl=http%3A%2F%2Fwww.sciencephoto.com%2Fimage%2F159936%2F350wm%2FE0700635-Pacific_Ocean%2C_topographical_map-SPL.jpg&exph=336&expw=400&q=pacific+ocean+map&simid=608040195401321800&ck=6F157F69F1A82A5E0304201AE10489A6&selectedindex=0&form=IRPRST&ajaxhist=0&pivotparams=insightsToken%3Dccid_CVJBtbHt*cp_B9FBB1B98D385C17FDC8C1CEF924B788*mid_E4876CF6B1CF71D830DFCA64F850CF58773D6E27*simid_608020837830037329*thid_OIP.CVJBtbHt5Mg69NX-zZO8EwHaHB&vt=0&sim=11&iss=VSI

    NOT Approved!

22. http://seawifs.gsfc.nasa.gov/OCEAN_PLANET/HTML/oceanography_geography
23. https://www.bing.com/images/search?view=detailV2&ccid=VdYOMt%2bx&id=8C68D8FEB85B22C0C590DD20D50CAA50EAEEB75A&thid=OIP.VdYOMt-xUTw15iGrXaBmLAHaFT&mediaurl=https%3a%2f%2fwww.researchgate.net%2fprofile%2fBen_Shaw5%2fpublication%2f222242546%2ffigure%2ffig3%2fAS%3a305117891973135%401449757182718%2fMap-of-the-Pacific-Ocean-showing-the-Andesite-Line-and-the-distribution-of-continental.png&exph=609&expw=850&q=andesite+line+of+pacific+ocean&simid=6079982547

65639179&ck=0BB360E2469598B255C132B40BD1F715&selectedindex=0&form=IRPRST&ajaxhist=0&first=1&scenario=ImageBasicHover
NOT Approved!

24. Geology of The Pacific Ocean - Andesite Line
http://www.liquisearch.com/geology_of_the_pacific_ocean/andesite_line
25. Timothy Clarey, *CARVED IN STONE, Geological Evidence of the Worldwide Flood,* (first printing March 2020), Institute for Creation Research, P.O. Box 59029, Dallas, TX 75229, ISBN 978-1-946246-25-7, pg. 140. **(Copyright Not Approved!)**

26. 'New Magnetic Nail Color' by Sally Hansen advertisement.

31. https://www.bing.com/images/search?view=detailV2&ccid=ixiESrKE&id=F0D6CE1160AAB980FDB5581EFB53381FC7AF371D&thid=OIP.ixiESrKEzlwDAW02VhZl7gHaFP&mediaurl=http%3A%2F%2Fi.livescience.com%2Fimages%2Fi%2F000%2F056%2F105%2Fi02%2Fglobal_map.jpg%3F1377194718&exph=407&expw=575&q=nasa+world+earthquake+map&simid=608015967170791785&ck=CAB44D25ACFB4C5126916B8476362BC4&selectedindex=15&ajaxhist=0&pivotparams=insightsToken%3Dccid_A3Azsxyq*cp_F9F26A5A8E035F93AF3E3EBAB7FD9745*mid_688E20A22886CFDBC99C9DB382F7B9A45A3E4402*simid_608037832782186566*thid_OIP.A3AzsxyqkgdOb55bEETNdwHaE8&vt=0&sim=11&iss=VSI&first=1&scenario=ImageBasicHover

36. Acts & Facts, Institute for Creation Research, *A Rock-Based Global Sea Level,* by Dr. Tim Clarey, Ph.d,. Vol. 48, No. 2, February 2019, pg. 9 - **NOT Approved!**

37. Acts & Facts, Institute for Creation Research, *Fountains of the Deep,* by Dr. Tim Clarey, Ph.d,. Vol. 43, No. 12, December 2014, pg. 16 - **NOT Approved!**
- Morris, J. D. 2012, *The Global Flood: Unlocking Earth'Geologic History*, Dallas, TX: Institute for Creation Research.

38. Acts & Facts, Institute for Creation Research, *A Rock-Based Global Sea Level,* by Dr. Tim Clarey, Ph.d,. Vol. 48, No. 12, December 2019, pg. 10-12 - **NOT Approved!**

39. General Concept from:
Cliff Ollier and Colin Pain, The Origin of Mountains, Routledge, London, copyright 2000, ISBN 0-415-19889-5 (hbk), pg. 277.

40. General Concept from:

Cliff Ollier and Colin Pain, The Origin of Mountains, Routledge, London, copyright 2000, ISBN 0-415-19889-5 (hbk), pg. 277.

45. http://sideshow.jpl.nasa.gov/mbh/series.html

46. Timothy Clarey, *CARVED IN STONE, Geological Evidence of the Worldwide Flood,* (first printing March 2020), Institute for Creation Research, P.O. Box 59029, Dallas, TX 75229, ISBN 978-1-946246-25-7, pg. 140. **(Copyright Not Approved!)**

47. Acts & Facts, Institute for Creation Research, *Fountains of the Deep,* by Dr. Tim Clarey, Ph.d,. Vol. 43, No. 12, December 2014, pg. 16
- Morris, J. D. 2012, *The Global Flood: Unlocking Earth'Geologic History*, Dallas, TX: Institute for Creation Research. - **NOT Approved!**